The Earth
#วิวาห์ปฐพี
Writer: Salmon
Illust: Maybew

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 0

A rose under the care of the earth.

“Mr. Thipakorn, since we are people of the same region and have known each other since the time of our fathers, I hope you will have no objection to my coming as a representative to ask for the hand of your daughter Rose for my son, Wasu.”

“I have already explained this clearly to Mr. Wasupon: this matter must depend on my daughter’s decision.”

“Does that mean you’re going to refuse?”

“Yes, if that is Rose’s wish, I will not oppose it. But the fact is that my daughter and your son have not yet met or had the opportunity to learn anything about each other. To tie today’s young people to a promise made by their parents in our generation, I think that is an exaggeration.”

Thipakorn answered the visitor, Wasupon, firmly in his decision. As the owner of the Chomchan flower farm and as the father of his only beloved daughter, Tippapha, he would not give in easily.
It was true that the two families had maintained a close friendship since the days of their fathers, who had pioneered and brought progress to the region. But giving his daughter to Wasupon's son was something that Thipakorn was completely opposed to.

“I don’t think we should fall out or create animosity in our old age over a broken promise, Mr. Thipakorn. Wasu has a bright future and a steady job, and I have only one son, who will take over the tea farm business.

Machine Translated by Google

Nabanan. Our farms are neighboring, and it is only fitting that our children come together as one solid family.”

“Sorry, Mr. Wasupon, but no matter how many times you come to negotiate about this, my answer will not change.”

As long as he was still alive and breathing, Thipakorn swore to do everything he could to protect his daughter. He would never allow Amornjinda to end up alongside Mahatthanakorn.

"So, Dad, did that old man give in and agree to give Rose to me today?" "That Thip is so stubborn that he'll probably never hand his daughter over to you so easily."

"He doesn't want to sell the land, he doesn't want to hand over his daughter... How long will that old man keep this up? Or is he trying to dodge the deal and not keep it?"

Wasu swore in a harsh voice, clearly angry at not getting what he wanted. As the only son of Wasupon, the owner of the Nabanan tea estate, he was the heir to everything: properties, businesses, and the hidden enterprises that the Mahatthanakorn family maintained under the guise of local benefactors.

"Those few dozen acres of his land are getting in the way of our plans. If we can't use the land as a passage, things will get even more complicated in the future."

Machine Translated by Google

"Leave it to me, Dad. That worthless, insignificant old flower farm owner... I'll teach him to stop being stubborn."

"Do you have a plan yet, Wasu? Do whatever you want, but don't bring trouble to me."

"Trust me, Father. I have a way to get the land you want for ourselves. And I'll also take his daughter as my wife. One shot, two targets: land and wife. It's a great deal!"

"Mrs. Din, excuse me."

"Between."

"There is a visitor to see you, Madam Din."

"Who would come to see me at this hour?"

"It's Lord Thipakorn."

"Mr. Thip? Tell him to wait in the living room. I'll be right there."

Kasama gave the order to her trusted assistant, who worked with her at Saenrak Farm, before looking away and putting down the financial documents she was reviewing. The fresh-faced woman paused her computer screen and rose gracefully, heading for the living room. She was confused and could not fathom the reason for Thipakorn's unexpected visit, especially so late and without prior notice or phone call.

"Good evening, Mr. Thip."

Machine Translated by Google

"Sorry for showing up so late."

"Do you have something urgent to attend to?"

"Din, I'm worried."

"It must be something related to the Nabanan Tea Farm."

From what she knew of Mr. Thipakorn, there were few things that made him so worried. One of them was the Mahatthanakorn family, the owners of the tea estate that occupied nearly a hundred acres of land. They were known for abusing their power, acting above the law, and for the many dirty stories she had heard over the years.

"Yes. Today Wasupon came to me again to talk about Rose. He tried to negotiate, but I refused as always."

"If Mr. Thip continues his steadfastness, they will eventually give up and lose interest."

"But this time I don't think they will back down easily. I know Wasupon has his eye on my land because it is valuable to his business. And Wasupon, in turn, wants to win my daughter, just as he has done with so many other women. He hurts them emotionally and then discards them. I don't want Rose to suffer the same fate."

"..."

"Din, can you promise me something?"

"What does Mr. Thip want me to promise?"

Kasama snapped out of his thoughts, which he had lost himself in upon hearing Mr.
Thipakorn about the problems she was facing. She knew she could not say with full confidence that the

Machine Translated by Google

Saenrak farm was completely immune to these problems.

The lands of the three farms were interconnected: starting with the Nabanan Tea Farm of the Mahatthanakorn family, which owned the largest area; followed by the Chomchan Flower Farm of the Amornjinda family; and finally the Saenrak Farm of the Watinwanich family, which was also a large property connected to the Chomchan Farm. The three farms had close relations since the time of their grandparents.

Wasu, who was the same age as Kasama and an old friend of hers, and Rose, whom she had known when they were younger, were also part of this story.
But so much time had passed that Kasama could barely remember them. After Mr. Thipakorn decided to send Rose to study abroad and she began living there, news about the young girl came only through conversations with adults. And since Mr. Thipakorn usually visited his daughter instead of bringing her back, direct contact had been lost. Even if they met now, they probably wouldn’t recognize each other.

"If something ever happens to me, Din, please protect Rose."

"Mr. Thip!"

"Besides your father, Kasidit, I don't trust anyone else but you now."

"Don't say that, Mr. Thip. I would never let something terrible happen to anyone again. You are the one who should protect and care for Rose."

Machine Translated by Google

"Nothing in this world is eternal or certain."

"But..."

"Din, don't abandon Rose."

“...”

How could he trust the most important thing in his life to someone who had never managed to protect what was precious in his own life?

Mr. Thipakorn, don't you think you are trusting the wrong person?

"Ah, Mrs. Din, where are you going? Do you want me to drive for you?"

"No need, Kaew. I'll drive myself."

"It's late. Are you going alone?"

Kasama did not respond to the question posed by her assistant, who questioned her in surprise. She had been in a hurry ever since she had parted ways with Thipakorn less than ten minutes ago. He had taken his leave after finishing discussing an important matter, leaving her alone to ponder everything, even though she was still confused.
But his words stayed in her mind, causing her to feel uneasy. That was why Kasama decided to drive after him, leaving Saenrak Farm.

"What was that noise? Was it an accident?"

Machine Translated by Google

With a tense face, Kasama pressed down on the accelerator to increase speed. She had heard the sound of a sudden brake followed by a loud impact as she drove on the road connecting Saenrak Farm to Chomchan Flower Farm. Soon, she spotted a car that looked familiar, the same one that had left the farm just a few minutes earlier.

Mr Thipakorn’s car had been involved in an accident, overturning before colliding with a large tree on the side of the road. The driver died at the scene, while Mr Thipakorn was seriously injured, breathing poorly and on the verge of losing consciousness. There were cuts on his face and body from the flying glass, and fresh blood was pouring from his head, which had been hit hard. Quickly assessing him, Kasama realised that he was in critical condition and needed to be rushed to hospital to save his life.

"Mr. Thip! You're going to be fine!"

Her voice was shaking with tension, and she could barely breathe. With trembling fingers, Kasama called the hospital to request an ambulance as soon as possible. Then she would also have to notify the police so they could collect evidence from the scene, as she suspected that this was not just an accident. It seemed to be a deliberate act by someone who sought to benefit from eliminating Thipakorn.

"Di...n."

"Don't say anything now. Please hold on, Mr. Thip. The ambulance is on its way."

"Rose..."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't worry, Mr. Thip. I won't abandon Rose. I promise!"

I promise to protect you with all my strength...

“Rose, stop for a bit and come eat, how about it?”

“Just this last bouquet, just a moment, Aunt Laura.”

The pretty-faced woman smiled pleadingly at Aunt Laura, who insisted that she put down the bouquet of flowers she had been arranging with such care and dedication. Rose wanted it to be perfect, worthy of the trust that customers placed in the small flower shop. Although it was only a small shop compared to the larger ones in the city, the attention to detail and care that went into each bouquet, meticulously choosing the flowers until everything was perfect, kept loyal customers coming back.

“You’re so dedicated, I don’t know if I have a bonus to pay you.”

“I don’t want a bonus, Aunt Laura. You already take such good care of me.”

“Speaking like that, Rose will have to stay with me here for a long time! I don’t care, I won’t let your father steal my niece back.”

Tippapha looked at Aunt Laura, who was her mother’s older sister. Since her mother passed away a few years ago, Aunt Laura had become both an aunt and a second mother to her. As for her father, who had just been mentioned,

Machine Translated by Google

he continued to help her financially and visit her frequently in the United States.

Rose's father was Thipakorn, the owner of Chomchan Flower Farm, a medium-sized farm located in northern Thailand, in the Chiang Rai province. This was where the entire family lived together before she and her mother moved to the United States so that Rose could continue her education and her mother could take care of her.

In fact, part of the reason she had loved beautiful flowers since she was little was because of the farm, which had a wide variety of flowers for her to admire. Even though she was away from home to study and build a future, Tippapha always missed Chomchan Farm. She hoped that her father would let her come home soon.

“When I go back to Thailand, I will definitely visit Aunt Laura.

I won't live there forever.”

“And your father has already allowed you to return?”

“He promised he’ll let me come back next year.”

“Last year when you graduated, I heard Thip say that too.”

Rose, with her pretty face, just smiled slightly, not knowing how to justify her father's words, since what Aunt Laura said was true. Initially, she had also hoped to return to Thailand once she finished her master's degree. But instead, her father asked her to stay and help Aunt Laura for almost another year. He often gave her hope that after

Machine Translated by Google

resolve something important that he said was not finished, she could come back.

“I'm sure my father has a reason he can't tell me.”

In the past, because she was very young, she didn’t have much knowledge about adult problems. Furthermore, her father rarely talked about his own problems with her. However, despite the distance, she always loved and respected her father. Rose wanted to go back home to spend time with him and also because she missed the flower farm. She wondered how beautiful the farm would be now, if it would have grown even bigger and if it would be even more stunning than before.

Crash!!

"Oh my God! I just made a small mention, you didn't need to get so upset."

"It's okay, Aunt Laura. I'll clean it myself."

Tippapha volunteered to help Aunt Laura, who accidentally knocked over her father's picture frame that was on the corner of her desk, breaking it.
Then she went straight to collect the broken glass from the picture frame to throw it away, making sure no one would step on it and get hurt.

"There!"

"Rose, are you okay, honey? You're bleeding!"

"Don't worry, it's just a superficial cut. It was my fault, I was careless."

"I'll get the first aid kit."

Machine Translated by Google

"Who's calling now?"

Her face filled with beauty, she looked towards Aunt Laura, who was already running to get the first aid kit. Even though she wanted to ask her to stop, she knew it would be useless at that moment. Then, the ringing of the phone ended up diverting her attention from the chaos in front of her.
Tippapha abandoned his task of picking up the pieces and answered a call from a familiar number.

"Hello?"

[Miss Rose, something terrible has happened!]

"Moddaeng, what happened at home?"

[Please stay calm. It's just that...]

"Speak now!"

[Your father... He had a serious car accident. The vehicle overturned and, at this moment, he is in the ICU.]

"..."

[Miss Rose? Are you listening to me? Can you hear me?]

Between the picture frame of his father, which was next to him in the photo and now shattered into countless pieces scattered across the
floor, and the heart that had just received devastating news from the other side of the world...

Which of the two would have been more shattered?

"When will my father wake up?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Your father's case involved severe brain trauma due to the accident. The doctor had to perform surgery to drain the blood and reduce the swelling in the brain, reducing intracranial pressure. In addition, other internal organs were also damaged due to the impact. Although the surgery performed yesterday was successful, doctors still cannot predict when the patient will wake up. Even if he does wake up, the damage to the brain could cause complications that we will only be able to assess after recovery and further detailed examinations."

"..."

"Either way, I recommend that the family prepare themselves emotionally."

Tippapha sat motionless, as if she had been hit hard on the head and neck, after hearing the words of the neurologist who was handling her father’s case. The doctor suggested that she prepare for the worst, which was not easy to accept.

She didn't want to deal with the loss anymore. After losing her mother a few years ago, what hurt the most was not having enough time to spend with her father. She had always waited for the opportunity to be with him, but he couldn't resist and left her alone, without warning.

"Rose, please go and rest. Even if you stay here, you still can't see your father."

"I'll wait here, Moddaeng. I'll wait until my father wakes up, so he can see me first."

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose, don't be stubborn. If your father finds out, he'll worry."

"So, I'll go back to the farm first and then I'll go to the police station."

"Rose, what are you going to do there?"

"I need to investigate my father's case, see if it was an accident or if someone did this on purpose."

The pretty-faced lady glanced quickly at Moddaeng, who was following her anxiously. Moddaeng was the daughter of the maid who took care of the house and the details for Tippapha’s father. Moddaeng, who was the same age as Tippapha, was the one who always contacted her with news about the farm and the neighboring properties that were connected.

"It was the day of your father's accident. On that day, Mr. Wasupon went to the farm to visit his father."

"The farm owner, Nabanan?"

"Yes, do you remember Wasu, Mr. Wasupon's son?"

"I remember vaguely. On the neighboring farm, there was Mr. Wasu and Mrs. Din, but it's been a long time since I've seen them."

"Mr. Wasu and Mrs. Din were a very beautiful couple. But in terms of personality, they were completely different. Here, Mr. Wasu is a powerful person, everyone respects him. Mrs. Din, on the other hand, prefers to be alone, not mixing with anyone."

"And do you know, Moddaeng, why Mr. Wasupon came to see my father?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I don't know, Rose. I wouldn't dare listen to private conversations about Mr. Wasupon."

Tippapha was disappointed and frustrated. What Moddaeng had told her did not give her any useful information about the difficult situation she was facing. However, when she heard about people she had known in the past, she could not help but try to reminisce about the old times, although she could not identify many changes.

"Rose, there's a car following us."

"Is that the car behind?"

"Yes. I noticed he's been following us the whole time."

"That car looks familiar. I think I saw it parked in front of the hospital."

"Let me speed up a little. If not, he'll soon stop following us."

"Yes! Rose, the car honked and is pulling up alongside us."

Tippapha lost her balance under the sudden braking, but was lucky not to be injured. The black truck with tinted windows pulled in front of her car, blocking the road to Chomchan Farm. A young man in the passenger seat opened the door and began walking towards her car.

"It's Mr. Wasu! How does he drive like that? That's dangerous!"

"Moddaeng, is that man Mr. Wasu?"

"Yes, it's him, Mr. Wasu."

Machine Translated by Google

Before she could finish speaking, the young man named Wasu approached the Sangjan farm car she had driven from the airport to the hospital in. Mr. Wasu raised his hand and gently touched the window on the side she was sitting in, smiling, even though she had not yet opened the door to get out or rolled down the window to

to talk.

"Rose, come down and talk to me."

"Rose, please don't come down. We don't know what his objective is yet."

"Don't worry. If I don't come down, he probably won't stop following us."

Tippapha made the decision with the same determination as her father, Mr. Tipakorn. She then slowly opened the car door and got out, coming face to face with the young man, who was not much taller than her. It was a meeting after many years, and she hardly recognized the boy from the neighboring farm, the one she used to call P'Wasu.

"It's been so long since we've seen each other. Rose, you're looking prettier."

"Mr. Wasu..."

"No, no, why so formal? We're like family, aren't we?"

"Why did you follow my car here?"

"Ah, just... I wanted to welcome Rose home in a warm way."

"Let me go!"

Machine Translated by Google

"Why is that? When we were kids, you even rode on my back, don't you remember?"

"The past and now are different things. I feel uncomfortable and I don't like what you are doing!"

"You are so beautiful and tough."

Since he didn’t let go of her wrist rudely, Tippapha then pulled her arm away from that rude touch, especially since they hadn’t met for so many years. Besides, the fact that they played together as children didn’t mean that it would be considered a type of closeness now that they were adults.

But because she was alone, she couldn't face the men's strength, and Moddaeng couldn't help her because she had been detained by Wasu's men, who were accompanying him, along with her driver. So, she would need to find a way to escape this uncomfortable situation by herself, without expecting anyone to come to her aid until her father had woken up yet.

As she hadn't expected help, the person who appeared and got out of the car that had parked behind her, quickly going to grab her wrist and pull her to take shelter behind her, was someone she hadn't expected.

"Damn, it has to be you, Din, always showing up to stick your nose where it doesn't concern you."

Din? So the person who came to help was his sister, Din, who lived on the farm next to his father's flower farm.

Machine Translated by Google

"You are mistaken. I never wanted to get involved in matters that are none of my business."

"Then why the hell are you butting into my business with the

Rose?"

"Because it is my duty."

"Duty? What duty is that? Don't come and interfere. If you don't want trouble, go back to your farm."

Tippapha's eyes widened in surprise, as she had not imagined that someone would dare to act in such a defiant manner against the law in the middle of the day, without fear of committing a crime, just as Wasu raised a pistol and pointed it at the person who was helping her, with several other pistols in the hands of her henchmen.

"If we're going to exchange shots, let's see who comes out on top."

"Din, leave me with him for now!"

Kasama glared at the man in anger after being surprised by her actions, who realized her strategy and had his henchmen from the flower farm follow Wasu's group, creating a numerical advantage. If a fight were to break out, it seemed like Wasu's farm would not come out on top.

"Don't think that without Thipakorn, everything will be easy for you."

"What the hell are you talking about?"

"Because Thipakorn entrusted Rose to me!"

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 1

Earthly Marriage

"Don't cry anymore, Nong Rose. It's just a small cut. I'll take you to get some medicine, and it will heal soon."

"Get out of the way, Din! I'll take care of Rose!"

The girl Kasama, just ten years old, was pushed hard on the shoulder by a boy who looked taller and stronger than her, causing her to lose her balance and fall.
Compared to him, she was small, shorter than other children her age. Furthermore, she was often teased and teased, being called frail and sickly for her weak and frail appearance. She clearly did not have the strength to help someone younger than her who had just tripped, hurting herself and leaving a slightly bloody knee, like Rose.

Machine Translated by Google

It was at this moment that Wasu readily offered to help.

"Nong Rose, come here, behind me."

"It was you, P'Wasu!"

"I wouldn't let Nong Rose fall, like P'Din made her trip and hurt herself."

"No! P'Din didn't hurt me. I tripped on my own."

Even though little Tippapha had tears in her eyes, whimpering in pain as she sobbed, the four-year-old girl quickly defended her friend. She didn't want P'Wasu to tell her father that P'Din had hurt her. In fact, Din hadn't done anything like that. She was actually the first one to help her, even before Wasu.

The only problem was that P'Din, being smaller and more fragile, was unable to carry her on his back. Unlike P'Wasu, who was strong and managed to carry her firmly.
But when she looked back, she realized that Din had not abandoned her or run away. On the contrary, he had picked up the doll that she had dropped and had gotten dirty with dirt. Furthermore, he had taken off her shoes and held them, walking behind her and watching carefully, not leaving her alone.

She was like an older sister who liked to watch from afar, full of care, always looking after and caring in silence, without liking to stand out or seek recognition for what she did. That was the impression that remained in her memories, although somewhat fragmented.

Machine Translated by Google

P'Din was someone who seemed too fragile to protect or care for her as well as P'Wasu...

But if the question were about human warmth and coziness, little Tippapha, at four years old, would probably answer immediately that, in this aspect, P'Din was second to none.

"You were very scared, weren't you?"

"Yes!"

"What happened a little while ago, I mean."

"I was scared, yes. Going through something like that would scare anyone."

"It's all good now. I think they'll back off for today."

Tippapha glanced at her friend, who had been the one to start the conversation with her. This was after Din had said that she would drive her to Chomchan Farm herself, while asking Uncle Dech and Moddaeng to follow them in the car. Moddaeng, in turn, immediately agreed enthusiastically, despite Tippapha trying to discreetly signal that she didn’t want to. After all, she didn’t know if this would be like “running away from a tiger to meet a crocodile.”

As mentioned, meeting P'Wasu again had already been a huge surprise for her, something that was beyond any expectation, considering they hadn't seen each other for decades. Wasu had changed so much that she could barely recognize him. And what about Din? She herself hadn't

Machine Translated by Google

sure of her intentions. Why did she decide to help her?
Didn't it seem a little too convenient that she would show up at
exactly the right time and place?

Maturity and the world itself did not teach her to look at life with
pessimism. However, due to the difficult circumstances she faced at that
time, Tippapha could not fully trust anyone.

Neither the people of Chanapanan Farm, nor those of Saenrak Farm.
After all, she still didn't know the details about her father's accident,
nor did she know enough about those who were now by his side.

Although Din had also changed, it did not go unnoticed by her eyes,
who observed her for a long time, letting herself be carried away by old
memories. P'Din, who used to be small and fragile, smaller than the
others and even smaller than her, now seemed to have grown.

She was taller than her and looked mature. Furthermore, she seemed much
stronger and more stable, demonstrating calm and firmness in the face of
adversity, without showing any sign of hesitation or fear.

Since when did P'Din stop hiding behind others?

Now, she dared to firmly face Wasu and protect her...

"Oh, it's just..."

"Is there something you want to ask me?"

"You remembered I'm Rose, didn't you?"

Kasama nodded, confirming the truth instead of answering with words.
The moment she drove up to that situation, in addition to the workers of
the

Machine Translated by Google

Chomchan Farm, whose faces were already familiar to her, such as the uncle driver whom she often met when her adoptive father Thipakorn visited, even the girl named Moddaeng who always greeted her when she came to Chomchan Farm, there was another person she had not seen for fourteen years. To someone unfamiliar with the area, it was easy to guess who she might be.

"But P'Din had changed so much... Rose almost couldn't recognize her."

"And even."

Tippapha glanced at her, who was still a woman of few words, just as she had been in her childhood when Din had been unable to keep up with her incessant chatter. This meant that she had not changed completely. There were still features that reminded her of the child she had been before. However, her serious, expressionless face and the absence of the smile she usually gave in response were the most noticeable changes since she had grown up.

Thinking about it, the Din now seemed much more reserved than when she was ten.

"It's been over ten years since we last saw each other.
How many exactly? I moved abroad to study when I was ten. If I count up to now, it's..."

"Fourteen years."

"Yes, exactly fourteen years. But why, when she came to help me just now, was P'Din able to remember that it was me, Rose?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I saw the Chomchan Farm car. From the looks of it, there was something wrong. So I decided to go check it out."

"Moddaeng brought water and snacks."

"Thank you. Moddaeng, you can leave now. If I need anything, I'll call."

"Yes, Mrs. Rose."

The owner of the beautiful face watched Moddaeng leave the living room of Chomchan Farm and then looked back at P'Din, who was taking a sip of water in a reserved environment, suitable for important conversations.

"About my father... does P'Din know what happened?"

"Before I met you and Wasu, I had just returned from the police station."

"What were you doing there? Does it have to do with my father?"

"I went to speak to the officer in charge of the case. It seems they are too quick to conclude that it was an accident. The officer told me that based on the evidence at the scene, it was probably due to driver negligence. But what I questioned and still puzzles me is that the memory card for the car's dash cam was not at the scene of the accident."

"You mean someone stole it?"

Machine Translated by Google

"There is no concrete evidence as to when the card went missing. At that time, I didn't even notice because I was worried about Uncle Thip's condition. It is possible that the card was stolen before or that someone tried to hide or destroy important evidence that was on it."

"You said 'at that time'? Does that mean P'Din was present at the accident?"

"Yes, I was the first person to arrive at the scene. I called the ambulance, notified the police and then followed Uncle Thip in the ambulance to the hospital. Afterwards, I went to give my statement at the police station."

Tippapha was silent as she heard the truth of what had happened, something no one had told her before. Not even Moddaeng had mentioned these details, only the basics when the rescuers had called the farm. This meant that the last person to be with her father before he arrived for medical care was P'Din.

"So is there anyone suspicious or any evidence to suggest it wasn't an accident?"

"I still can't accuse anyone without concrete evidence."

"So when you told Wasu that my father entrusted P'Din to me, what exactly did that mean?"

Kasama kept eye contact with Nong, who seemed full of confusion and concern at the situation she was facing. She understood and sympathized with Rose, but she could not say anything that was just an assumption or without concrete evidence, so as not to make her even more uneasy. As for the case of Uncle Thipakorn, Kasama would do her best.

Machine Translated by Google

all to seek justice and ensure that he was not ignored. Besides, she had promised her uncle to take care of Rose.

"Before the accident, Uncle Thip came to the farm to meet me and mentioned about Mr. Wasupol wanting to ask Wasu for her hand in marriage. But Uncle Thip refused, as he always did when that side insisted."

"Why didn't my father ever tell me about this?"

"As for that, I don't know the reason or motives behind Uncle Thip's decisions. I can only tell you what I know. He told me that he was uncomfortable with the situation and asked me, if anything happened to him, to take care of you. He asked me this very seriously, and I promised that I would not abandon you."

"..."

"I want you to be careful, Rose, because you are in a difficult and very dangerous situation right now. Both because of the land your father wanted to leave you and because of the people who may be waiting for an opportunity."

Even without pointing fingers directly at the culprits, Kasama believed that Rose was intelligent enough to understand the gravity of the situation. She was also certain that the Mahattanakorns, father and son, would not give up so easily. Now that everything seemed to be going in their favor, with Uncle Thipakorn absent to protect his daughter, Rose was in an even more vulnerable position.

This was probably why Uncle Thipakorn had asked Kasama to protect Rose, even in a moment between life and death. Kasama knew that he was fighting with all his might to survive,

Machine Translated by Google

while she would also do her best to fulfill her promise.

"I want Rose to come live under my care."

"P'Din?"

"For now, until the case is resolved and Uncle Thip gets better.
Think about it. When you have an answer, let me know."

Did this mean that her father had really decided to leave her in P'Din's care?

"Lom, are you busy? Can you talk now?"

[P'Din, you never call me, and now you decide to do this?]

"I need your help with something important."

[If P'Din is asking like this, how could I not help?]

Kasama was silent for a moment as she looked through the rearview mirror at the Chomchan farm area, where she had just said goodbye to Thipakorn's goddaughter to return to her own farm, Saenrak.
However, she was still worried about the young girl's safety, so she decided to call Wayo, her cousin, who could probably help her deal with the situation that was troubling her.

"Rose is back."

Machine Translated by Google

[Rose? Ah, now I remember. The girl from the flower farm next to yours, right?]

"That's right. But now she's in danger."

And maybe it's too difficult to deal with alone...

"Miss Rose, may I come in?"

"Yes, you can come in."

"I brought you some warm milk. I noticed you didn't eat much for dinner. By the way, what are you looking for? Do you want me to help?"

"No need. I'm just going through some old boxes. It's like reliving memories."

"But there's so much dust! Maybe I should clean it up first."

"Are the childhood toys still here? Dad put them all away."

"What toy is that? Look at that ugly stitch in the seam!"

Tippapha stared at the poorly stitched arm of her favorite childhood teddy bear. She had almost forgotten about it, long ago abandoned in a box that had never been opened again. But Moddaeng's observation of the poorly stitched arm brought back a memory: the person who had done the clumsy work was the same person who had recently brought her something important to think about and decide on.

Machine Translated by Google

"When I was a kid, his arm got torn. I remember trying to fix it with duct tape, but I couldn't. So P'Din snuck in and fixed it for me."

"Ah, was it P'Din who did this? I take it back right now!"

"I wonder... is P'Din someone I can trust right now?"

"Why do you speak like that, Miss Rose? It seems like you don't trust P'Din, even though she helped you today."

"But P'Din was the first person present at my father's accident. Maybe it was a coincidence, but what was she doing there at that time? And there's also the matter of my father confiding in me... Never mind! I just want to wait for my father to wake up and ask him the truth directly."

Tippapha's beautiful face looked at Moddaeng, who was looking at her with an even more confused expression. The young woman's words had left Moddaeng puzzled, not fully understanding the confusion she was going through. But even if she explained everything, she knew that Moddaeng would not understand.

"Moddaeng, go rest. I'm going too. I need to go to the hospital early tomorrow."

"Don't forget to drink all the milk, okay?"

"I'm not a child anymore for you to force me to drink milk!"

"Moddaeng is just worried, Miss Rose. Everyone on the farm is worried about Thipakorn and also

Machine Translated by Google

with you. Now you need to take care of yourself, so that nothing happens to you too. You need to be here as a strength and inspiration for all of us."

"I understand. Please thank everyone for me."

Thipakorn's daughter, who may become the new "mother" of the farm in the future, ended her conversation with Moddaeng before turning her attention to the old teddy bear she had just taken out of a storage box.

Even though it was covered in dust and still unwashed, Tippapha decided to put it on the table instead of returning it to the box.
She stared at it, lost in thought, and mumbled, even though she knew her question would probably never be answered.

"I wonder what P'Din is like now?"

"Don't you want us to accompany you, Miss Rose?"

"Everyone wait here. There shouldn't be any problems inside the hospital."

Tippapha ordered the farm workers who had accompanied her to the hospital that morning to stay outside. She assumed this was Moddaeng’s idea, concerned to avoid any repeat of the previous day’s incidents. But when she arrived at the front of the intensive care unit, where her father still remained in critical condition, she was met with an unexpected face: the man she had had a disagreement with the day before.

Machine Translated by Google

"Have you come to visit your father, Miss Rose? I've been waiting here for a while now."

"Mr. Wasu, what are you doing here?"

"I came to visit Uncle Thipakorn, of course. See, I brought a basket of fruit."

"Then take it back, my father hasn't woken up yet and can't eat anything."

"Miss Rose, eat in his place. I'm worried about both you and Uncle Thipakorn."

The pretty-faced young woman instinctively backed away when she saw the man approaching her in an overly intimate manner. Fortunately, he did not have the courage to act disrespectfully or try to invade her space, as he had done the day before, when she made her displeasure with his lack of education and respect very clear.

"Miss Rose, do you want me to call the men from the farm over here?"

"No need, Moddaeng. He won't dare to cause trouble here."

"Are you going to visit your father now? That way I can go in and visit him too."

"Mr. Wasu, if you have something to say, say it quickly. Don't bother my father."

"Then let's talk over there in that corner. You don't need to be afraid, this is a hospital. And I promise I won't be disrespectful to you again. I apologize for yesterday. I was so excited that I couldn't control myself."

Machine Translated by Google

"Please go ahead. Actually, I have something to talk to you about too."

"Do you want to talk to me alone? How about we go to a nice restaurant outside the hospital? We can talk while we eat, the atmosphere will be much better than here."

"I don't have time to do something so unimportant while my father is still in a coma."

"Sorry, I just didn't want to see you so stressed or sad about what happened to Uncle Thipakorn."

Tippapha stared at the man she was trying to keep her distance from. After sitting down on a chair, she saw that he had also sat down nearby, which made her move away and put her bag between them, making it clear that she didn't want him to get any closer.

"Mr. Wasu, do you know if my father has any enemies or conflicts with anyone in the region?"

"What are you suspecting?"

"I think what happened to my father may not have been an accident. Maybe someone who wants the Chomchan Farm land is involved, or maybe it's some conflict of interest. But I really can't think of who it could be. That's why I'm asking you, who knows the area well."

"It's not hard to figure out. I'll tell you: the enemy who has always been against your father is Din."

"What?"

"Surprised? But if you know the truth, you'll be even more shocked. Think about it: Din's Saenrak Farm is much smaller than my family's Chanapanan Farm.

Machine Translated by Google

He wants to take over Chomchan Farm's land so he can have more land than my family. He might be planning to gain Thipakorn's trust so he can betray him later."

"But the Din I knew as a child wasn't like that."

"People change as they grow up. Besides, yesterday she said that your father entrusted you to her, knowing that Thipakorn is still in a coma. How can you be sure that your father really said that? She knows that without Thipakorn, all the land and assets will go to you, so she went ahead and deceived you as well. Worse still, she might even be behind the attack on your father."

“...”

"But don't worry, Miss Rose. I, Wasu, will be here to protect you."

"Please, Miss Rose, don't make rash decisions like that again. Moddaeng almost had a heart attack! You spent so much time talking to Wasu that I thought something serious had happened."

"I can take care of myself, Moddaeng. And besides, nothing bad happened."

"It's a good thing Din sent the men from Saenrak Farm to help ensure security. That way, if anything happens, they can help you."

"Men from Saenrak Farm? Who are they?"

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha asked, puzzled by what Moddaeng was saying. She had no idea that there were people from Saenrak Farm accompanying her since early morning. She thought they were all from Chomchan Farm. It seems that she misinterpreted and jumped to conclusions.

“The workers on our farm are only Uncle Dech and P’Aod. As for the young man named M, he is not a worker on our farm. Moddaeng only found out from P’Aod that Mr. M is actually an undercover police officer.”

“And who gave permission? I didn’t know anything.”

“Maybe Mrs. Din didn’t tell you because she didn’t want you to worry.”

“It’s all Mrs. Din this, Mrs. Din that.’ Which farm are you from, Moddaeng?”

“It’s nothing to do with it, Miss Rose! Moddaeng is just commenting on what she saw. I don’t really belong to anyone.”

The pretty-faced young lady glared at Moddaeng, who immediately raised her hands, as if admitting defeat and declaring neutrality before her mistress. Even so, Rose still couldn’t shake the disturbing thoughts that had been tormenting her since that morning. And to make matters worse, new problems had arisen, making her dinner even more tasteless.

“If I have to choose someone to help me, will I make the right choice?”

“You’re talking about Mr. Wasu and Mrs. Din, right?”

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes."

“Ah, that’s not hard to decide! If I were Moddaeng, I’d choose Madam Din. Mister Wasu is so impulsive that if you get close to him, you might end up being threatened with a gun at any moment.”

“People may seem good or bad at first glance, but the heart is a mystery. Even if someone presents themselves as a good person, I don’t want to judge hastily or trust them completely without getting to know them better.”

“If you don’t know, just ask, Miss Rose. Then you can decide based on the answer.”

“You’re right. I should go ask and clarify things, so I don’t get confused anymore.”

“Hey! Where are you going, Miss Rose? You haven’t even started eating!”

Moddaeng watched her mistress, who suddenly hurriedly stood up from the dining room and walked quickly towards the entrance of the house. Without wasting any time, she rushed to follow her, but was forced to stop when her mistress stopped abruptly, staring at someone who had been mentioned in the recent conversation.

Tippapha stopped in front of Kasama, who had also stopped. They both exchanged glances for a few moments before one of them broke the silence and spoke first.

“P'Din, what are you doing here?”

“I came to see you, Rose. But it looks like you were leaving, doesn’t it?”

Machine Translated by Google

“No, it wasn’t going anywhere.”

Tippapha lied through his teeth, even though his earlier attitude and obvious haste completely contradicted his improvised answer. It was such an unconvincing excuse that it didn’t even seem necessary to question it further.
However, P'Din did not insist and instead explained the reason for his visit.

“I just got back from an errand in the neighboring district. It was only now that I heard that you found Wasu in the hospital.”

“It was nothing major.”

“There was no problem, right? If you need any help, just let me know.”

“There wasn’t, I solved everything myself.”

“If that’s okay, then I’ll take my leave.”

“P'Din came to ask just that and is already leaving?”

“Yes, I have already finished what I had to do.”

Kasama replied in her usual calm voice, while keeping her eyes fixed on Tippapha's, who continued to stare at her intensely, as if the matter was not yet over. And she was right, for she heard the unexpected question that came from the younger girl.

“Have you had dinner yet?”

"He is well."

Machine Translated by Google

"Then stay for dinner. Rose has something important she wants to talk about."

The fair-faced lady glanced at the person who had quickly interrupted, leaving no room for her to refuse, before turning to Moddaeng, who had hurriedly invited her into the dining room after the landlady's daughter had entered earlier.

"Rose invited you to dinner?"

"Yes."

"But I don't think that's it."

"Why not?"

"I feel like Rose invited you over to watch her eat."

"..."

"I know you've been stressed about a lot of things, but take care of yourself too, I don't want Uncle to worry."

Din spoke with a voice full of concern and good intentions, because he noticed that Rose was just sitting in silence and barely picking up food to put on her plate or bring to her mouth. So, it was a dinner where only she was eating for a while, until the older one had to speak, even though she normally doesn't like to meddle in other people's business.

"Mahattanakorn or Watinwanich?"

"What?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose is asking you, Din, who Amornjinda should trust more at this time, between Mahattanakorn or Watinwanich."

"I don't know. I don't have an answer."

"No answer? I thought you would say to trust more in

Watinwanich."

Here is the Portuguese translation:

Since Mr. Wasu had told her to trust Mahattanakorn when she had asked the same question, but the answer she had received was completely different, she did not understand what Din's "I don't have an answer for you" response really meant. Or could it be that Din did not want her to trust?

"Because Rose's trust can't be decided by anyone else. Rose is an adult now. I think you can decide for yourself about that."

"And if I decide to choose Mahattanakorn, what will Din think?"

"I will respect your decision."

"But you said you promised your father?"

Does this mean that if Din respects her decision, it would mean breaking his promise to her father?
Tippapha wanted to ask to clarify as clearly as possible, so that she could hear both sides and then make a decision based on her own feelings.

Machine Translated by Google

"Even if Rose chooses Mahattanakorn, if it is your choice and will, I have ways to protect you in my own way. Don't worry."

"And you're not going to tell me that Mahattanakorn is a bad person? You're not going to warn me to be careful of him or not to trust him, like Mr. Wasu told me to be careful of Din? You have the right to explain, Rose gave you the opportunity. Din, tell me what Mr. Wasu is like?"

"Actions speak louder than words. I'm not going to say someone is bad without proof and I'm not going to say I'm better than anyone else.
Rose, decide based on what you see and what you feel. I have nothing to
justify or explain."

"Okay, thanks, Din. That really helped me make a decision."

"Like this?"

"I have decided that I will remain in your care."

"..."

"Because I chose Watinwanich."

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 2

A kind but strong person.

“Wasu, my father says you shouldn’t be so trustworthy.
How’s the plan with Thip’s daughter going? How far have you gotten with this? This is no time for you to get comfortable and relaxed!”

“Get out of here.”

Wasu gave an order to the last woman he was dating, whom he brought to Nabanan Farm, after his father walked in and interrupted the moment, clearly displeased to see Wasu still relaxing and enjoying himself, being served while the Chomchan Farm issue was still unresolved.

But today Wasu felt that things were going well, after a private conversation with Tippapha, and believed that the owner's daughter, Thipakorn, would fall into the same trap as her own father.

“Everything is going according to plan. You don’t need to worry.”

“How can you say I wasn’t worried? The people there are already asking us to find a way to expand or change direction. And the police have been keeping an eye on it, if it weren’t for the informants who are tipping us off, but once we get the land next to Chomchan Farm, the land on Saenrak Farm won’t be needed anymore.”

Machine Translated by Google

“Old Thip is lying there, a vegetable. He’s going to die anyway. He doesn’t have the power to stand up and protect the daughter he loves so much, Dad. And even if Din tries to interfere, Rose is a naive woman, easy to fool. One little push and she’ll fall into the same trap she did when we were kids.”

Just like today, when he heard Wasu’s words about the suspect in the accident involving Thipakorn, he noticed the confusion and insecurity in the young woman’s eyes, who couldn’t hide her feelings. This meant that even Kasama needed to be watched and couldn’t be trusted so easily.

“I trust you to solve this. Don’t let it slip away this time.”

“It's a shame the old man was lucky and didn't die right away, otherwise things would have been easier.”

“That’s why I said you can’t make a mistake this time. If you don’t, we’ll all be in trouble.”

“But even if he wakes up, he won’t be able to do anything against a son-in-law like me. Or, if he recovers, he’ll die of heartbreak when he sees that I’m marrying his daughter and taking away the land of Chomchan Farm.”

A girl like Rose, who always needs others to protect and pamper her, if someone like Wasu really tried hard, no weak person like Din would be able to defend her!

Machine Translated by Google

“Sir, Rose has come to visit you.”

Tippapha reached out and held her father’s hand, even though he had not yet regained consciousness or woken up after the life-saving brain surgery that night. There were now many machines attached to his body, helping to keep his condition stable. All she could do was visit him every day, at the times the hospital allowed. However, the miracle she had always hoped for had not yet happened. The doctor still told her that they would have to monitor his condition day by day and could not say when her father would wake up.

It was like a period of no good or bad news...

“This time, Din came too.”

“Thip, Din came to visit us.”

Kasama greeted Mr. Thipakorn after watching from a distance and letting Tippapha have some alone time with her father, not wanting to interrupt or disturb.
Because that day was the first time she had the opportunity to visit the owner of the Chomchan farm together with the farm's heiress, and she was also the one who went to pick up the young woman from the hospital as agreed the night before.

“Since she was little, Rose has always trusted her father’s decisions in everything, because he always chose what was best for her. That’s why I chose to trust Din and

I will follow the request that dad made for her.”

Thip, don't worry about it, Din promised to fulfill what was agreed. The rest, you need to recover quickly, get well soon, so you can take care of yourself and

Machine Translated by Google

protect Rose personally.

There was no response from the man who was still in a coma, and the hope of his quick recovery seemed increasingly distant. Thus, silence fell as both visitors stood there without saying anything more after what had been said earlier. But at least Kasama believed that if a person who was being kept alive by machines like Mr. Thipakorn could still perceive something, he would surely rest assured and trust that **Rose was not facing all of her problems alone!**

"It's almost lunch time, Rose, are you going to eat something?"

"No need, Din can take me back to the farm.
I'm not hungry."

"People don't eat just because they're hungry, but it's important to eat meals at the right time."

"Can you stop complaining?"

"But..."

"I chose to be under Din's care, as my father asked, but that doesn't mean Din will complain about me or treat me like a child."

Kasama stared at the girl, who, from the looks of it at the moment, seemed more like she was complaining about her than the other way around. Although her words weren't even close to being a complaint, they were just a show of concern. But if it was

Machine Translated by Google

interrupted so clearly, she would not insist any further or become irritated.

As I mentioned before, I don't like to get involved in other people's problems. I have a habit of avoiding getting involved in other people's lives. After all, with my own life and the responsibilities I have as the owner of the Saenrak farm, I already have so many things to deal with that I barely have time for anything else.

"Din! Where are you taking me?"

"Back to the farm."

"But you've already passed the farm entrance. Where exactly are you going?"

Tippapha asked with concern to the driver who was taking her to visit her father and then taking her back to her field, but why was she going in the wrong direction, without saying anything, and still refusing to answer her question? She acted as if it was intentional, as if she had done it on purpose, and instead of giving an answer, she did what seemed to be the answer to her question, turning into Saenrak farm, which was less than ten minutes away.

"Why are you taking me to Saenrak Farm?"

"Let's have lunch first, just so I can watch you eat."

"What?"

"If you eat everything for lunch, then I'll take you back to Chomchan Farm."

Machine Translated by Google

"..."

So this is how she's going to act, like she didn't listen to me when I asked her not to treat me like a child? She's going to give me a suggestion, like she sees me as a child? When I told her I was under her care, she wasn't supposed to treat me like that. I think we need to talk and get this straight.

"Here it is."

"Thanks."

"Please wait a moment. Mrs. Din asked us to prepare the table for lunch. It will be ready shortly."

"What about Mrs. Din? Where did she go?"

"She went to sign some documents at the office. But she said she would be back for lunch."

Tippapha nodded in response to the older lady, who seemed to be more experienced than the maids at her own farm. After a coincidence, she had ended up at Saenrak Farm without planning to visit, and the lady of the house had left her waiting in the separate room while she disappeared without a word.

"Miss Rose has grown up and is very beautiful. I have seen her since she was very little, she was lovely, running and playing with Mrs. Din on the farm."

"Did you know me when I was a child?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, of course! I have worked at Saenrak Farm for over twenty years."

"Sorry, I didn't remember you. I was very young at the time."

"I am very happy to have the opportunity to see Miss Rose again."

"By the way, how many people live here? It's pretty quiet."

The young girl, with her pretty face, began to look around the separate room.
Her eyes fell on a picture frame on the shelf behind her, with a photo of Din next to several people she didn't recognize. Then she saw a photo of the Watinwanich family, with Din, Mrs. Katchakorn, and Uncle Kasidit.

In the photo, Din looked quite young and was smiling widely...

Nothing like the Din she saw when she came back this time, when she hadn't seen her smile once yet.

"Only Mrs. Din lives here at home."

"Oh, what about the others? Isn't Uncle Kasidit here?"

"The boss passed away several years ago, Miss Rose."

"..."

Since she had never asked her father about Uncle Kasidit, Tippapha did not know that her father's friend, whom she respected greatly, had passed away several years ago.
It was a good thing she didn't ask Mrs. Din earlier due to lack of knowledge, because if she had received the answer, she probably wouldn't have known how to react.

Machine Translated by Google

"Mrs. Din is an only child, so she had to take on the responsibility of taking care of all the farm's affairs since she was still in college. At that time, it was a very difficult period in Mrs. Din's life.

A lot of heavy things happened, especially for a woman alone. But because Ms. Din is very strong, she managed to overcome everything and became the talented Ms. Din that she is today."

"And those other people in the photos, who are they? I don't recognize anyone."

"Oh, they're Mrs. Din's cousins. The boss's younger brother's daughter. After Mrs. Din, we
have the aunt and uncle. And 'Mr. Fai' is the one who gets
nervous and doesn't like having his picture taken."

At least, in her misfortune, Mrs. Din had many cousins. Comparing to her, Tippapha thought that if she lost her father, she would be alone, as she had no cousins.
Besides Aunt Laura, she doesn't have anyone else close to her in the family.

"Aunt Chan, is lunch ready?"

"Mrs. Din just arrived. I'll go check if everything is in order."

Kasama watched as Auntie Chan walked away from the separate living room area, before casting a glance at the young girl, who was now staring intently at the painting she had picked up. As she walked closer and looked directly at it, as if she wanted to see if the other person had any questions or wanted to ask something.

"I'm sorry for touching Mrs. Din's things without permission."

Machine Translated by Google

"No problem."

"I didn't recognize the faces, so I asked my aunt who was who."

"These three are my cousins. They rarely come to the farm."

"They're all very pretty, it seems like Mrs. Din's family only chooses pretty people."

"Oh?"

The young woman, with her pretty face, stopped a little surprised after letting out a comment she shouldn't have said, not knowing if she would be surprised or not understand what she meant, but she just gave a general compliment, without referring to anyone in particular, of course.

"Mrs. Din, Miss Rose, lunch is ready."

"Thank you, Aunt Chan. Miss Rose, let's eat."

It was really lucky that Mrs. Din had let her remark slip by, which she felt she shouldn't have made.
When she changed the subject and said to go to lunch, she willingly agreed and followed after her without hesitation.

"I'm glad to see Miss Rose is eating well."

"The food made by Aunt Chan is delicious."

"If so, Miss Rose needs to come to the farm to eat more often."

"Come more often? You'll be watched closely, for sure. It'll be like when I was a kid and the teacher would watch to see if I ate everything on my plate."

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha purposefully turned to make eye contact with the farm owner, and she stared back at her, after Mrs. Din seemed to be satisfied with her eating her lunch, and was now ready to take her back to Chomchan Farm, as she had promised.

"Then, I'll get you a dessert to cleanse your palate. Today we have 'lodchong' with coconut milk."

"I'm done, Mrs. Din, you can take me back now."

"Yes."

"Are you just going to answer me with a 'yes'? I thought you were going to praise me for eating everything on my plate."

"Eating everything on a plate with one hand is not something extraordinary."

"Okay, I know I'm not as good as Mrs. Din. I admit it."

She honestly admitted that she would not be as good as Kasama, a woman who alone can take care of hundreds of workers and manage the farm business in place of her uncle Kasidit. Because, even though she was back to face all the problems and take care of her father alone, the work on the Chomchan farm was too much for her, who was still so inexperienced, to the point that she wanted to cry, even with the help of her father's assistant to guide her.

"If you want to be good, then finish every meal and eat everything on your plate, eat at the right time. Only then will you be considered good."

"You know, Din, that you look like a teacher?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I?"

"Yes. Did I make the right or wrong decision in choosing to stay under your care? You are already so strict about food alone, imagine what other things are like."

"But you can change your mind at any time."

"Like this?"

"Yesterday during our conversation, I may not have talked about this, so I wanted to make it clear: If you ever no longer want to be under my care or if you find a better option, you can tell me directly."

Kasama wanted Rose to know that she was not pressuring her or trying to force anyone who had decided to accept her help to feel uncomfortable or pressured. Even though she had given her word and kept her promise to Rose's father, she was willing to understand Tippapha's wishes as well.

So she wanted to make it clear from the beginning that if Rose wanted independence, she would be willing to offer it, as long as she was sure Rose would be safe.

"So, Rose also wants to tell Din that if one day she no longer wants to take care of me, she won't have to keep her promise to my father. Din can cancel at any time, no problem, and tell me directly."

"I wouldn't be the person to give up early."

"But if taking care of me is something that causes you more problems than benefits, you have the right to give up."

Machine Translated by Google

"When I accepted the promise with uncle, I already knew what was coming."

"..."

"I'll stop taking care of you when you tell me you don't want to anymore."

"Rose, you're back!"

"What happened, Moddaeng? You seem in such a hurry."

"There was a problem on the farm. After..."

Tippapha looked at Moddaeng who was running to meet her after seeing that she had arrived at Chomchan Farm. But upon realizing that Din was with her, Moddaeng stopped talking, hesitating, not knowing whether to continue with the important topic.

"Rose, I'm going back now."

"Don't worry, Din. You can tell me what happened? That way Din will know too."

"So, after Din took you to the hospital, some time later Mr. Wasu showed up at the farm. He said he wanted to see you, but when I told him you weren't there, he didn't believe me and went into the house. Even though I tried to stop him, he didn't listen, and only left after searching the entire house and not finding you."

"How did Mr. Wasu have the nerve to break into the house like that?"

"Plus, he brought more people with him. I was afraid he would come back."

Machine Translated by Google

"I think Mr. Wasu will go back to the farm, as you said, until he can find you."

"What should I do, Din? Should I report the incident so that Mr. Wasu doesn't invade the farm anymore?"

"It's no use. If you file a police report, it will just be a note. And besides, the law is still weak to punish, since there was no real incident."

"So we should wait until something serious happens? Until someone gets hurt or until the situation becomes more serious? I don't understand."

Kasama also agreed with Tippapha that in many cases where help should be immediate, people do not receive assistance in time. It seems that action is only taken after a loss or something serious has happened. As if it is necessary to wait until the damage has already been done, a reactive approach rather than a preventative one.

"Don't worry. I won't let that happen."

"Din, do you already have a plan to deal with this?"

"I'll take you to stay at Saenrak Farm for now."

"Stay on your farm, Din?"

"Yes. That will resolve the situation for now, and then I will think about how to deal with the other issues."

"But if I go, won't it cause trouble for you and the people on the farm?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I and everyone here will protect you, Rose."

I promise you this, on the honor of Kasama of Saenrak Farm.

"Have you finished packing your things?"

"Yes, I didn't bring much from the United States. I was going to buy what was missing here."

"My farm and yours are very close. If you forget something, you can always come back and get it."

"I've already spoken to Moddaeng, but she's kept everything so well that it's like she'll be living on Din's farm forever."

Tippapha smiled slightly at her friend as she listened to her story. After deciding to accept and follow Din's suggestion without much thought, perhaps because the situation was urgent and there was no time to think.
She didn't know when Mr. Wasu would return with his group to cause trouble at Chomchan Farm. Temporarily moving to Saenrak Farm seemed like a safer option than staying here alone.

"Besides Moddaeng, do you want to bring anyone else?"

"Just Moddaeng is fine, Din. I don't want to bring too many people and cause trouble on your farm."

"I don't see this as confusion. Don't worry."

"Then I'll call Moddaeng now. I don't want to make you wait too long. Moddaeng is hopeless."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't worry. There's no need to rush, I can wait."

Kasama said calmly to the girl, after going out for a walk and enjoying the view of the flower farm while waiting for Tippapha and Moddaeng to finish organizing their essentials. The girl was the one who left first, as she had finished packing her things faster, and they took the opportunity to talk a little in private while waiting for the other.

"I love this place because the flower garden next to the house was planted by my mother."

"There are many roses."

"That's why my mother named me Rose, because she loved roses."

"That name was very well chosen for you."

"And Din, why is your name 'Din'?"

"When I was little, my mother had me prematurely. I was born very weak and had to be kept in an incubator for weeks. My father said I was smaller than other children at the time and looked very weak and sickly. So my father named me 'Din' to bring good luck, and my real name is Kasama, which means 'earth', because he wanted me to grow up strong and strong."

“Uncle managed to choose a perfect name for you, didn’t he? That's why it grew so strong.”

The person with the soft face did not respond or add anything else, he just nodded, agreeing with the girl's thought. Even though now her parents

Machine Translated by Google

were already deceased, the expectations they had for her shaped her and helped make her strong and steadfast.
Kasama always felt gratitude and acknowledged her parents' kindness, and she tried every day to live the best life possible, taking advantage of the love and protection she had received.

“Din, I would like to ask you something.”

"What is it?"

“When I move to Saenrak Farm temporarily, could I come back to take care of my mother’s flower garden? Normally, ever since I went to the United States with my mother, my father has been taking care of everything here. But now that my father… I would like to take care of something important that represents my parents’ love.”

“If I’m not busy or on the farm, I’ll take you to take care of it every day, okay?”

“...”

Although it wasn't a firm promise or said with much seriousness in her voice, the sincere promise made her feel touched by her friend's kindness, in a way that made her sway, touched by the softness of her words.

Because Tippapha didn't know how many times she would need to thank Din to be able to repay her kindness, for being willing to help her without fear of her own being harmed. He came into her life at that moment when she no longer knew who to turn to.

Din was the one who made her feel safe and not alone...

"I'm so happy!"

Machine Translated by Google

“Din!”

A person shouted the name of the owner of the neighboring farm in a loud voice full of surprise at the unexpected situation. Suddenly, the person she was trying to avoid, Mr. Wasu, returned to the Chomchan farm again and invaded the flower garden next to her house, a private place. He even behaved aggressively, pushing Din's shoulder hard, causing her to lose her balance and fall without expecting it.

The situation seemed the same as when they were children. It was as if back then, Din was trying to help her, but was also being attacked by someone else, because they knew that Din had no way to defend himself.

“I already warned you, Rose, don’t trust her.”

“Mr. Wasu!”

“Why are you acting like this? Don’t you want to listen to what I say and believe me, like you used to?”

“What are you doing? Let me go now!”

“I warned you not to mess with Din! Why don’t you listen to me?

Always makes me tough and cruel!”

“Let go of me! You’re hurting me!”

Tippapha screamed as the young man dragged her by the wrist forcefully, not caring about the pain she felt.
It was as if Mr. Wasu was selfish, wanting everything to happen according to his will. But unfortunately, things are not that easy.

“Let go of Rose!”

Machine Translated by Google

“I already told you, Din, don’t meddle.”

“Let go of her hand now, Wasu! Can’t you see that you’re hurting the girl?” Kasama grabbed the young man’s wrist with her other hand to try to stop Wasu, but she didn’t dare pull hard or move the girl away, afraid that she would hurt her even more with the effort.

“Why would I have to listen to you, you coward?”

“Because if you don’t understand people’s language, there’s no point in talking anymore.”

"..."

This time, Tippapha didn’t widen his eyes in surprise like last time, when he saw Mr. Wasu pointing a gun at Din, who was standing still like a target. But now, the one holding the gun and pointing it at the man was the one who had always been the target, the person who had always been second best.

It wasn't the Din from before, who used to be pushed and fall, without the courage to get up and always staying behind...

But this Din was the type of woman who would face anyone without fear in her eyes, and was unwilling to back down even if the other had the advantage in physical strength and gender.

“Do you want to joke until your teeth fall out? You, Din, dare to threaten me with a gun?”

“Let go of Rose!”

“You coward, Din! When you were a child, you would run away from

even a dog! Now, how dare you threaten me?

Machine Translated by Google

You wouldn't even have the courage to shoot a dog!

You're weak like your father...” **Bang!**

The sound of the gunshot echoed, passing less than an inch from Wasu's foot, causing him to lose focus and let go of Tippapha's wrist without realizing it. Kasama then took the chance and pulled the girl, who looked scared, to stand behind her, in a safer place. She asked in a worried voice:

“Rose, are you okay?”

“Din, I... I'm fine.”

“Din! You dare shoot me?”

“Dogs stay with dogs. Why would I shoot them? But if they’re not acting like people, that’s different. If they don’t understand human language, they have to shoot.”

“You want to try to be bold with me? Then know that whoever becomes my enemy will never have a happy ending.”

“Wasu, what I did was just a warning shot.”

“Because if I really intended to shoot, you wouldn’t be here asking who will be the first to fall!”

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 3

Being an important person to Watinwanich.

"Nong Din, what happened? Why are you so dirty?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Father..."

"You fell, right? My daughter always comes back with a bruise."

"She didn't fall on her own, it was Mr. Wasupon's son, who always comes to torment Din. I've fought with him several times, but when I'm not around, he always comes to bother Din."

"Is what Aunt Chan said true, Nong Din?"

Young Kasama nodded to her father. She had never told her father about these problems, as she knew that he was already too busy with work and the farm workers. She didn't want to bother him with her child's problems, so it was Aunt Chan who told her father for her, even after Kasama said that everything was fine and that she didn't want her aunt to say anything.

"Then, I'll take care of your wounds today, Nong Din. If it hurts, let me know."

Kasidit very carefully began to treat the wounds on his daughter's knee, fearing that if he were to be more abrupt,
Kasama, who has always been weak and

sick, could get hurt even more. Although Kasama was fragile since birth, Kasidit never stopped her from facing the world or being raised in an overprotected way, because he wanted her to learn and grow strong.

Before the father could continue the conversation to ease the silence, he knew that despite her fragile appearance, his daughter was strong inside. That's why he never heard a moan or complaint from her.

Machine Translated by Google

"Why didn't you ever tell me, Nong Din, that you were being bullied by your classmates?"

"I didn't want to worry you, father. I'm weak, so I can't defend myself and I end up being tormented."

"When your mother was still here, she always taught you to be a good girl. Do you remember?"

"I remember, father. I remember well."

"Your mother would be very proud to see that you are a good girl. But being good and not hurting others does not mean that you should allow people to mistreat you, daughter."

"But I can't fight Wasu, father. He's big and strong, and I'm a girl, with little strength."

Kasama knew that if she tried to fight, Wasu would probably hurt her even more, since he always acted like the leader of the group and liked to bully others, including the children of the farm workers and his classmates. Fortunately, Wasu never bothered her, perhaps because he always said that she would be his bride when she grew up.

"You don't always have to fight physically. If you don't have strength, you can use intelligence and wisdom, like you did in the tests, where you always got high marks. I know you are intelligent and you are not weaker than anyone else."

"Wasu always gets low grades."

"See? That shows how much better you are than him. Your mom and dad just want you to grow up healthy, able to take care of yourself and help others when you need it.

Machine Translated by Google

adult. I want you to grow up strong and not let anyone torment you. And most importantly, don't think about tormenting anyone."

"I never thought about hurting anyone, Dad."

"But when you grow up, if someone attacks you and there is no one left to protect you, you will need to defend yourself. Don't let anyone hurt you, because I won't be able to stay here to heal your wounds forever."

"P'Din, if your hand hurts, tell me, okay?"

"Don't worry, Rose. I'm fine."

"But the scratches are pretty bad, P'Din. I still feel pain, even after applying the medicine."

"The bruises will heal in a few days, don't worry."

Kasama was momentarily removed from her memories of the past, after being asked by the handsome-looking person which made her refocus on the present. Tippapha was cleaning Kasama’s wounds carefully. Thinking back, it had been many years since his father had last tended to his wounds.

Although her father had told her not to let injuries go untreated, he was no longer there to protect her or give her medicine.

Kasama believed that if her father saw what was happening at Chomchan's farm today, he would not be disappointed that she had faced the situation instead of

Machine Translated by Google

run like a weak person and give up, as he had done in the past.

Because the moment she promised Thipakorn, Kasama found herself in the middle of a tense situation, like a burning flame, without end.

The fact that she is involved with the issues of Mahattanakorn and Amornjinda...

Although he didn't like to get involved in other people's problems, it meant that Watinwanich, who had always lived in peace and solitude, would never be the same again.

"How can I stop myself from worrying? After all, I was the cause of P'Din getting hurt."

"It was you, Rose, who was the real cause."

"There's no need to feel guilty, P'Din. Even if I'm foolish, I couldn't do anything differently."

Even though P'Din was hurt a bit, Rose still felt bad. What if the trouble she caused on the farm resulted in something even more serious or dangerous? She would feel even more guilty towards P'Din and his family.

"I'm not trying to make you feel more guilty Rose. That's not necessary, as you have no reason to blame yourself."

"P'Din?"

"The person who should feel guilty is Wasu, not you, who was just trying to help."

"I have much to thank P'Din for helping me. But I didn't know you were carrying a weapon."

Machine Translated by Google

"I don't normally carry a gun, but now, to protect myself in an emergency situation, I have to carry my father's gun."

"I don't feel good knowing this, P'Din. Don't let me go back home, please."

Tippapha said this in a soft voice, full of concern, because although the situation on the farm was calmer now, she knew that this was only temporary. After gathering more friends from the farm to help, she heard gunshots, which indicated that the opposing side had outnumbered them, and P'Din was no longer joking around. Wasu then retreated, but she felt that P'Din's life would never be peaceful again.

"Rose, rest assured here at Saenrak Farm. I assure you that Wasu won't come here to cause trouble. I've already spoken to the farm workers to make sure everything is safe."

"I feel safer here and I don't worry about myself anymore, but... I'm worried about
P'Din."

"Worried about me?"

"I don't care if you don't care, P'Din. But promise me you'll be careful? Don't go out alone anywhere and don't be reckless."

"I promise I'll be more careful, but right now we have something more important to worry about."

"What is it?"

"Aunt Lantr has the medicine ready. Here, Rose, you better eat on time."

Machine Translated by Google

"Ah, I thought it was something serious..."

The farm owner, with a pretty and serious face, was surprised by P'Din's concern. She thought that the situation was something really serious, perhaps something related to Wasu, that she and P'Din needed to protect themselves. But in the end, the concern was only about the meals.

"Serious?"

"Seriously. P'Din is the one who is most concerned about food, because it's important to eat at the right time."

"Don't worry, if I'm busy, sometimes I even skip lunch."

"So why are you worried now?"

"I don't want Thipakorn to accuse me of not taking good care of you."

"..."

Who said P'Din doesn't take good care of Rose?

She was being taken care of even better than if she had taken care of herself...

"Who is it?"

"It is me."

"What are you doing here, P'Din?"

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha asked to be sure, wanting to understand who was knocking on her bedroom door at night. This was the first night she had been at Saenrak Farm, and she now lived in the big house with P'Din, while her mother was in the small house next door, so that it would be easier to take care of her.

"This room is usually empty, so I brought some incense to purify the room. This will make the air fresher."

"P'Din, have you entered yet? Come in."

"Don't worry, Rose. I just remembered and brought this for you. Now, rest."

"We can talk first if you want. I'm not sleepy yet."

"If you allow."

Kasama asked permission, respecting the privacy of

Tippapha. Even though the house was hers, she knew that by

living there, Tippapha also deserved his own space

and privacy. "I'll leave this here." "Yes, P'Din, you can

to leave."

"When you said you felt weird..."

"I haven't felt well since I came home. I think it's because I haven't been here in years. Now that I'm here, I need some time to get used to it."

The beautiful young woman stood, talking to P'Din from a distance, perhaps because she was a little uncomfortable seeing P'Din ready to sleep, but still talking to her intimately. Watching the

Machine Translated by Google

Her mannerisms meant that she knew Din wouldn't do anything outside of what was necessary, like the time she didn't want to sit down to talk, so she chose to stand.

"If you need anything or want anything, let me know. I'll get it for you."

"But I'm already bothering you too much."

"I already told you not to think like that."

"If this all ends well, I promise I'll return the favor and do something nice for you."

"I didn't do this expecting anything in return."

"I know P'Din isn't that kind of person. Even though we met again after many years, in such a short time, I've already noticed." "Yes, then you don't need to expect anything in return."

"But I really want to repay you, P'Din. I don't want to be in your debt."

"If you want to give back, just take care of yourself. Just knowing you're safe is good enough for me."

"..."

Although P'Din's words were simple and without any great expectations, there was something very sincere about them. Rose felt a little guilty, as she felt like she was just receiving, but P'Din's words reassured her. She realized that, to Din, her safety was enough, and that meant everything.

"I'm going back to my room now. You rest, Rose."

"What it was?"

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama stopped walking when she saw an old teddy bear on top of a table near her backpack. Her attention was completely taken by that object, making her observe it more carefully, until she walked up to it, curious, and asked in surprise.

"That teddy bear..."

"Do you remember him, P'Din?"

"The one I gave you when you were a kid, remember?"

"Yeah, I couldn't believe you still remembered that."

"I can fix it for you if you want. I know how to sew better now."

"No need, P'Din. Leave him as he is. He's a good memory, just the way he is."

Kasama took the teddy bear in his hands, looking at it fondly, before turning and looking into his eyes, expressing his gratitude.

"Thank you, P'Din, for always protecting me."

She knew he had always protected her since she was a child.

"P'Din, are you leaving now?"

"Yes, I won't be spending the night in Chiang Mai."

The trusted assistant asked her boss in surprise, because normally, when P'Din went to meet a client in another province or in a distant place, she

Machine Translated by Google

He would stay overnight at a hotel in the city and only return the next day, without rushing. Kasama was not a person who liked to make long trips back on the same day.

"P'Din, let me drive for you. I'll help."

"No. I'll drive back to the farm."

Kasama focused on the road. The journey to Saenrak Farm would take more than three hours, and she knew she had to go back to fulfill her promise to Tippapha to tend the orchard of trees on the farm as agreed.

"But Rose's situation really worries me. In addition to the situation of her father and his family, we still don't know what to expect from the workers at Nabanan Farm."

"I know, that's why I don't want to give them any chances."

"P'Din, be careful too. When the people on the farm hear that you have problems with the Nabanan Farm, everyone will be very worried about you. Everyone is ready to protect you, after all, you have many enemies and a big story to tell."

"And what did you discover? Did you find any important clues?"

"Nothing important, unfortunately. The tycoons use people to do their dirty work, and when the police start investigating, they're already gone. Their family has too much power and influence to avoid any accusations."

"That is, if I found the right person, I could reach those truly responsible?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, but the mission will be difficult."

"Stay calm. The trap is being set."

Kasama glanced in her rearview mirror and noticed a motorcycle following closely behind her. The vehicle had been following her since they left the city and headed toward the farm. The road was surrounded by trees and mountains, a secluded area that was usually quiet at night.

"P'Din! There's a motorcycle following us!"

"That's right, it's an important clue."

Kasama accelerated her car to gain speed, but the motorcycle was still behind her, staying close. She knew that if she couldn't get away, it could be dangerous. At the right moment, the motorcycle tried to overtake and cut in front of her. Kasama had no choice but to collide head-on with the motorcyclist, because if she tried to swerve, she would lose control of the car.

The motorcycle, in turn, tried to swerve, but ended up losing control and falling. The two men on the motorcycle did not give up, accelerating again after Kasama's car. When they managed to get closer, one of the men took out a gun and shot at her car.

"P'Din, don't get out of the car. They have guns!"

"I have one too."

"There are two of them!"

"It's still under control. The situation didn't turn out as I expected."

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama slowly opened the car door, as the tire was punctured by the gunshots and the vehicle could no longer move. The two bikers were pointing their guns at her, ready to shoot, when suddenly, a quick crash happened, and another bike appeared, shooting at the men. Two accurate shots knocked the attackers down, and the police soon arrived, controlling the situation.

"If you shoot again, you'll regret it."

"Yes, Lieutenant."

"I warned you not to take any risks, but you did it your way, Kasama."

Kasama sighed in relief. She knew she was taking a risk, but the operation had been necessary. It was risky, but the reward of capturing those responsible for the crimes was worth the risk, especially now that she had concrete evidence.

"P'Din, are you back?"

"Nong Rose, it's already so late, why haven't you rested yet?"

"Hello."

"So, you're P'Din's cousin, right? I saw your picture."

She didn't answer the question directly, as she was interrupted by someone who was following P'Din. It was a person she had seen before, in the photo she was in.

Machine Translated by Google

in the living room, the same photo she had asked Aunt Chan about.

"Lom, nice to meet you, Rose."

"Do you know Lom?"

"P'Din spoke about her."

"He's my consultant, so I took her advice."

"Hi, Lom."

"You really are Rose..."

Kasama quickly put her hand over her mischievous cousin Wayo’s mouth because she knew she was going to say something nonsensical. Wayo’s impulsive and talkative behavior usually left everyone at a loss for how to react, so she quickly tried to stop Wayo from saying any more.

"Nong Rose, go rest. P'Din will sleep at home today. Let's talk tomorrow, okay?"

"Yes, I'm going to bed now."

Kasama waited until she was sure that the people with her had left the area and only then turned around with a stern look. Meanwhile, Wayo was still laughing, not understanding what was happening.

"You can't talk like that!"

"P'Din, when you meet a beautiful woman, you just want to say that she is beautiful, there is no harm in that."

"The problem is, Nong Rose is not a friend."

Machine Translated by Google

"Ah, I forgot that she's P'Din's wife now."

Kasama didn't know whether to be happy to help, or whether to tell Wayo to leave Saenrak Farm now.
same.

"It seems they have a bigger plan than we imagined, and
the culprits who were caught won't confess who was behind it. They just claim it was an incident, saying P'Din drove recklessly and that prompted them to chase her. Who knows, maybe the police chief is on their side."

"Without evidence, don't jump to conclusions. Acting on impulse and making accusations like this will only complicate the situation further."

"I'm not afraid. Whoever it is, come as you are."

"Control your anger a little, you're not a child anymore."

At the moment, the person most irritated by the news coming from the police station was Wayo herself. The two captured criminals
continued to deny having received orders from anyone, insisting that she was the one who drove recklessly, even though Kasama was completely right, and Kaew, her assistant, could confirm as a witness that this did not happen. However, it seemed that the truth had lost out to the money and influence of the Mahattanakorn family, who had once again managed to escape.

Machine Translated by Google

"Right now, they're probably content, thinking they can do anything without consequences, living above the law. I think it's quite possible they'll try to strike back at P'Din."

"I'm already prepared to deal with this. Right now my biggest concern is Nong Rose. I don't know how to convince Wasu to change targets and leave her alone."

"Are you thinking of using yourself as a target instead of Rose?"

"If there's a way, I want to redirect the attention to myself."

"Well, I guess there is a way. But if Rose finds out, she definitely won't agree. Besides, if your uncles find out, they'll be totally against it. They would never let you risk your life for a woman."

"What's the plan?"

"P'Din, you're not afraid, are you? You don't listen to anyone's warnings."

"Speak soon."

Kasama looked at Wayo, who shook his head in dismay at her stubbornness. Kasama had a firm resolve, without doubts or hesitation, especially when it came to helping Tippapha. She had already promised Mr. Thipakorn and Rose herself that she would do her best to protect her, and she was determined to fulfill that.

"From what I heard, Wasu wants to marry Rose, right? And his father wants Mr. Thipakorn's land, right?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, they want to take everything that belongs to the Amornjinda family."

"So why don't you take everything that belongs to the Amornjinda family before them?"

"What?!"

"If we can make them believe that Rose and Chomchan's land already belong to you, I bet they'll lose control and turn all their attention to you."

"..."

"The way I see it, this may be the only way out."

"P'Din, can you believe I never wanted the Chomchan Farm? If it were up to me, I would never be able to take care of everything my father was always responsible for. I'm not as capable as he is. And if I had a choice, I would prefer my father to recover and become strong again, even if it meant getting nothing."

"I know that. Nong Rose is not an ambitious or selfish person."

Kasama spoke to the young woman with understanding and empathy. Although the two had been apart for fourteen years, she could still see the natural sweetness and kindness in Tippapha that had remained the same since her youth. The passing of time may have matured Tippapha, but it had not changed her gentle and kind essence.

Machine Translated by Google

girl. On the contrary, it only made her a stronger and more determined woman.

"Does P'Din think my father will recover? Is there still any point in hoping?"

"Uncle Thipakorn is very strong. Now, he is fighting. And you, Nong Rose, need to fight together with him."

"Yes, it's true. I can't allow myself to be weak. I have to be strong and continue to give strength to my father."

Tippapha spoke firmly, as if to convince herself. At the same time, P'Din was by her side, protecting her and helping her find emotional stability amidst the confusion and fragility that overwhelmed her. Perhaps it was because that morning he had taken her to visit her father in the hospital. Their time there was brief, as was allowed, but it was enough to give her some comfort. Afterwards, before returning, they stopped at the flower garden at Chomchan Farm, as he had promised.

She let her take care of the flowers, the lawn, and enjoy that moment of peace and connection with nature.

"I'm going to cut some roses to put in the vase at home."

"Leave it to me, I'll cut it for you."

"No need, P'Din. I can do it myself."

"Watch out for the thorns, I'd better help."

The beautiful young woman's gaze fell on P'Din, who kindly and thoughtfully offered to help. She took charge of removing the thorns from the roses with care and dedication, checking them thoroughly to ensure they were safe.

Machine Translated by Google

Only then did he hand over the bouquet, now free of thorns, delicately, and speak in a soft tone.

"Nong Rose."

"Yes?"

"Marry me."

"..."

She was so surprised that for a moment she thought maybe she had heard wrong. Or maybe it was an illusion.

How come she was suddenly proposing to her without any warning? It was as if she had made the proposal completely unexpectedly, without any preparation. If you asked her how surprised she was, it would be easy to see from her clearly stunned expression and the blush on her face.

Without realizing it, she let the roses fall from her hands. Fortunately, P'Din was quick enough to catch them before they hit the ground. She then handed them back to her and repeated her question, this time calling her name clearly.

"Nong Rose, will you marry me?"

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 4

Tippapha, the impatient bride

"Good morning, Khun Rose... Huh? You didn't even see me here?"

Wayo smiled as he greeted Tippapha, who had just arrived at Saenrak Farm with Kasama.
Wayo had heard from Auntie Chan that the two of them had left early to visit their father Thipakorn in the hospital and also to stop by the nearby flower farm. When Wayo heard the sound of the car pulling up in front of the house, he went out to greet them, but he didn't expect to be completely ignored.

"P'Din, where is Khun Rose going in such a hurry?"

"Nong Rose probably doesn't want to marry me."

"What? It seems like we're talking about completely different things here."

Machine Translated by Google

"It's about the plan you suggested last night, that of me marrying Nong Rose. I don't think that plan will work."

Kasama responded with concern. The plan Wayo had proposed during their serious conversation the night before seemed to be the only solution to make the Mahattanakorn family shift their focus to Kasama. Although Kasama agreed with the idea, it seemed that Tippapha was not only unwilling to cooperate, but was also irritated, perhaps even furious.

"Don't tell me you proposed to Khun Rose."

"Yes, I ordered it just now, at Chomchan Farm."

"And what did Khun Rose answer?"

"She walked away and didn't say anything. On the way back, I tried to talk to her, but she wouldn't answer."

"Wait a minute, I'm confused. How exactly did you propose to Khun Rose? Was it at an appropriate time? In a romantic setting? Or did you simply present the reasons for marriage?"

"No, I just said, 'Nong Rose, marry me.' I think she got mad."

"..."

"I didn't even get a chance to explain why it would be necessary get married.

I was planning to say that there was an important reason, but Nong Rose didn't even want to listen to me."

Unbelievable! Kasama really surprised Wayo with his clumsy approach. From the situation that

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama described it, anyone would be stunned, not knowing how to react. It wasn't hard to imagine why Tippapha hurried into the house, without stopping to talk to Wayo. "I don't think Khun Rose is mad at you, P'Din."

"Then why didn't she respond and refuse to talk to me?"

"She must be surprised. Even I was surprised just hearing that. Instead of starting with the reasons, you went straight to the marriage proposal. Any woman would be speechless. I bet Khun Rose is getting it all wrong now."

"Then I need to go apologize and explain everything to her."

"Give Khun Rose some time first. Don't go after her now. About marriage, I think you need to think carefully about the reasons and prepare yourself. Khun Rose won't accept marriage so easily, even if it's just a plan."

Exactly. If Kasama had told Tippapha that the marriage was just a plan to deceive the Mahattanakorn, distracting them and drawing attention to herself, Tippapha would have been certain to oppose it with all her might. She would not have agreed to such a risky thing.

It was complicated enough that Tippapha did not know that the night before, Kasama had ventured out to collect evidence against Wasu. Even without knowing, Tippapha lay awake anxiously waiting for his return.

Kasama couldn't let Tippapha know the truth and worry even more...

Machine Translated by Google

"Khun Rose! What's your head? You almost bumped into me!"

"Since when have you been here?"

"Khun Rose, are you running away from someone? You seem to be in quite a hurry."

"Moddaeng, come here. Follow me for a moment."

Tippapha grabbed Moddaeng’s wrist, leading her into a more private conversation. After escaping P’Din and entering the house, she felt rude for ignoring Wayo’s greetings. However, this was an emergency; she needed a moment to compose herself. Otherwise, if P’Din came after her to continue talking about the wedding, she would surely lose her composure and become even more confused.

"Help me think, Moddaeng. What should I do now?"

"What happened, Khun Rose? Why this air of mystery?"

"Just now, when P'Din took me to Chomchan Farm, she... Well, she..."

"What happened? Or did those Wasu men cause trouble again?"

"No, it has nothing to do with Wasu. But this situation has left me at a loss for what to do, Moddaeng."

Machine Translated by Google

With a pretty face marked by confusion and anxiety, Tippapha sighed deeply. Her heart was still racing with nervousness. P’Din’s sudden marriage proposal had caught her completely off guard, as if he was casually suggesting a meal. She had said it with such a serious expression that she could not decipher her emotions, while her own heart was filled with questions.

"P'Din asked me to marry him."

"..."

"See? As soon as I told you, even you were left speechless."

"It's not that I was speechless, Khun Rose. I'm just holding back from screaming in excitement!"

"What?"

"Come to think of it, who would have thought that P'Din, with all that seriousness, would be so romantic? You've barely met again and she's already asked you to marry her."

Moddaeng’s enthusiastic reaction was completely beyond Tippapha’s expectations. To bring her back to reality, Tippapha lightly slapped her friend on the forehead. She needed a practical opinion, not someone fantasizing about scenarios that seemed impossible.

"Stop dreaming! I'm asking for advice, not telling you a story to make you imagine things."

"Ah, I can't help it, Khun Rose! Just look: on the first day, P'Din protected you; then, he took care of you on the farm; now, he brought you to a safe place and even proposed to you! If it were me, I would accept without thinking twice."

Machine Translated by Google

"That would be too hasty!"

"Why? If it's someone good, who can protect us, I don't see a problem."

"But I'm not you, Moddaeng. And besides, how could I marry P'Din if we don't even love each other?
How do you expect me to marry someone without love?"

"Look at the couples of old, Khun Rose. They got married and love came with time."

"No, I'm modern."

"Okay, fine. But even for someone as modern as you, don't you think P'Din is an easy person to like?
She has a way that makes anyone around her want to open their heart."

"..."

"You're closer to P'Din than anyone else right now. Why don't you try to see if she's someone you can allow yourself to love?"

Open my heart and love P'Din?

"I don't have time to think about love or anyone while my father is still in critical condition."

"Oh, oh... I don't think I'll be able to convince you."

"I have already decided, Moddaeng. I will refuse this marriage proposal outright."
clear and definitive."

Despite Moddaeng's expression of regret, which seemed to have been rejected herself, Tippapha was determined. Moddaeng tried to argue, asking her to

Machine Translated by Google

He should have considered it better before refusing, but Tippapha felt that he had thought enough since they left Chomchan Farm for Saenrak Farm.

Rose and P'Din couldn't get married now...

Because there was still no love between them!

"Khun Rose, are you looking for someone?"

"Aunt Chan, have you seen P'Din? I've already searched the entire house, but I couldn't find her."

"Khun Din has gone to the office. As for Khun Lom, she has gone out to take care of some matters in the city. They should both be back later this afternoon."

"Is the office far away?"

"Not much, Khun Rose. If you take a shortcut through there, you'll be there in less than ten minutes."

"Then, I'll go to the office to find P'Din. I have something important to talk to him about."

Tippapha decided to go meet Din, whom she had avoided earlier. To be honest, she was surprised and unprepared to deal with P'Din's marriage proposal. But after thinking it over and making up her mind, she wanted to decline clearly, to avoid any misunderstandings or complications in the future. Since she would be staying at Saenrak Farm for some time, she preferred to keep everything harmonious.

"Is Khun Rose going to walk there? It's very hot at this time. Let me let Khun Din know for you."

Machine Translated by Google

"No need, Aunt Chan. I can go by myself. On the way back,

Can I get a ride with P'Din since she should be back?

for lunch at home." "As you wish, Khun Rose. I will

prepare lunch, then."

The young woman nodded in thanks as Auntie Chan walked away. Then she changed direction, heading toward the office, which she had never been to since moving to the farm the day before. However, she only took a few steps before she was stopped by Moddaeng's excited voice, who had caught up to her in a hurry.

"Khun Rose, it's so hot! I'll accompany you and hold the umbrella."

"Why does everyone treat me like a child?"

"That's not it, Khun Rose. I'm responsible for taking care of you. Also, Khun Din asked not to let

you go anywhere alone for the time being."

"I've barely arrived at the farm and it already seems like P'Din has bought your loyalty,

Moddaeng."

"Khun Din didn't buy me, Khun Rose. Although I would love for her to buy me... and also propose to me."

P'Din's marriage proposal was not something trivial to be mentioned in such a casual manner, and Tippapha gave Moddaeng a serious look, trying to contain her enthusiasm before it got any more overboard.

Machine Translated by Google

"Hey, enough! You're going too far. P'Din is not someone to be trifled with."

"But why are you scolding me, Khun Rose? Wait for me, let me accompany you."

"You don't have to follow me. Go home now!"

"Sorry, Khun Rose. Don't be mad! Let me come along, please!"

"Khun Din isn't in the office, is she? There's no one here."

"But Auntie Chan told me she would be here. Did we come to the wrong place?"

"It doesn't look like we made a mistake, Khun Rose. The Saenrak Farm office sign is clearly visible. Do you want me to ask someone?"

Tippapha watched Moddaeng, who was helping her search the surroundings with her eyes. It seemed that they had come here for nothing, because the owner of the farm, with whom she wanted to discuss an important matter, was not there. And, even worse, there was no one around to ask for directions. Moddaeng then decided to explore the surroundings.

"I'll ask someone then. Wait here."

"Khun Rose, what are you doing here?"

"Do you know me?"

The pretty-faced young woman asked the older man who approached her as she waited at the entrance of the

Machine Translated by Google

office. It had been about five minutes since Moddaeng had left, but she still hadn’t returned. Luckily, a farm worker showed up, saving her from waiting indefinitely without knowing what to do.

"My name is Kla. I am the head of the farm workers. I know you because Khun Din informed us of your presence. Everyone here knows who you are."

"But I haven't met Mr. Kla or the other farm workers yet."

"Khun Din told us that it would be easy to recognize you because you are very beautiful, Khun Rose. Any worker who saw you would immediately know who you are."

"..."

Instead of giving such curious instructions, P'Din could have introduced her directly to the farm workers, Tippapha thought. That would have kept Mr. Kla from thinking she was conceited or overconfident.

"But, Khun Rose, you came to look for Khun Din, right?"

"Yes. Where is she now?"

"She just left. Not long ago, it was with Kaew."

"Kaew? Her assistant?"

"Yes, Khun Rose. Kaew is my daughter."

"And isn't P'Din going to have lunch at home? It's already past lunch time."

"Don't worry, Khun Rose. She'll probably have lunch with Kaew and then continue working. They've known each other for many years. Kaew takes care of Khun Din

Machine Translated by Google

for so long that you already know exactly what she needs, even without her saying it."

"..."

If her feelings were represented by a graph, they would be in extreme highs and lows. Receiving Mr. Kla's praise made her visibly more cheerful. But hearing that P'Din and Kaew were so close and understood each other so well—something she didn't even want to know—made the "graph" plummet, along with her mood, which became irritable.

If they understand each other so well, P'Din should ask Kaew to marry him...

Asking someone who has been by your side for years, not her, who has just come back after so long!

"What happened, Khun Rose? Are you having dinner alone? P'Din hasn't come back yet?"

"She went out with Khun Kaew since lunch time...
I mean, P'Din went out to take care of some important matters and ended up not coming home." "That's fine, but you don't need to worry about me. I'm not the owner of the house, I'm just here as a guest."

Wayo glanced at Tippapha, who seemed to be in a bad mood. Perhaps it had something to do with the trouble P'Din had caused earlier that morning when he had asked a woman to marry him without giving any explanation. After being lectured and ignored, she had disappeared to avoid confrontation, perhaps because she had not yet found a convincing excuse to offer Mr. P'Din's daughter.

Machine Translated by Google

Thipakorn. However, none of this was surprising to Wayo.

"Khun Rose, you're upset about something, aren't you?"

"There is?"

"It's about P'Din's marriage proposal, isn't it?"

"You know about this?!"

"Yes, I know. But I didn't know how to bring it up.
Actually, this idea was mine. I suggested it to P'Din, thinking it would be a solution."

"Like this?"

Tippapha asked with a curious tone as she looked at Wayo, who had broken the silence during dinner. Although it was clear that the environment was a little uncomfortable, she didn't know how to start a conversation with someone she wasn't very close to. It was then that Wayo brought up the topic, immediately catching her attention.

"The situation is complicated. I suggested that P'Din propose to you because it was the only way to resolve the problem."

"And how would marriage solve all this?"

"You are the sole heir of Thipakorn, and as such you have become a target for greedy people, such as members of the rival farm, Nabanan. If you marry P'Din, they will understand that everything you own is under her protection, which will increase your security. They will retreat, believing that they no longer have a direct way to target you."

Machine Translated by Google

"So the marriage proposal was all planned and based on your suggestion?"

"Yes, but I apologize if P'Din failed to explain it properly, leading to misunderstandings."

"So that's it... I already thought it was strange that she asked me to marry her, since we've known each other for such a short time."

Tippapha laughed, but clearly trying to hide his mixed feelings.

Perhaps Wayo realized that, in fact, she felt embarrassed and even a little disappointed for having interpreted the proposal as something more romantic than it really was.

"Now that you understand better, would you accept to marry P'Din?"

"I understand the reasons, but I believe marriage should be based on love, not just necessity."

Tippapha sighed. Like any woman, she dreamed of a marriage that was made out of love, something special and unique, and not out of convenience.

"If you wait for love, it might be too late, Khun Rose. Besides, it would only be a sham marriage.
In the future, if you meet someone you really want to be with, you can explain the situation to that person. They will understand."

"If accepting this marriage will only bring me trouble and put P'Din in danger, I will not agree."

"P'Din has already decided to protect you, and there's no turning back now."

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha fell silent, acknowledging the truth in those words. P'Din had gone to such lengths to protect her that it seemed impossible to back down. But was it really necessary to continue? Using a sham marriage to solve the problem seemed more of a burden than a solution.

"If you think that's the only solution, Khun Wayo, I'll think about it. But I still hope to find another way to solve everything without having to have a fake marriage."

"Of course, if you really don't want to, we'll think of another solution. There must be a way to deal with enemies without involving marriage."

"Thank you. I'll think about it."

"Isn't Khun Rose sleepy? I can barely keep my eyes open."

"Moddaeng, go to sleep. You don't have to keep me company."

"But P'Din asked me to..."

"If you're yawning so much, stop insisting. Go to bed, Moddaeng. I'll wait for P'Din alone."

Tippapha ordered Moddaeng, who hesitated, insisting on staying by her side. Since nine o'clock, Tippapha had been sitting and waiting for Din. Dinner, which had finished around seven, was already far away, and even Khun Wayo had retired to rest. She was the only one left in the house,

Machine Translated by Google

no sign of P'Din from noon until almost eleven at night.

Did P'Din plan to spend the whole day and night with Khun Kaew?

"Then, if you'll excuse me, I'm going to go rest. Khun Rose, don't stay up too late, okay?"

"Yes I know."

The owner of the beautiful face crossed her arms, deep in thought. She had a lot on her mind lately. Just dealing with the problems related to her father and the people at Nabanan Farm was enough to make her restless. And now there was the matter of marriage, brought up by P'Din. After listening to the explanations and reasons from Khun Wayo, who confessed to being the originator of the idea, Tippapha became even more confused.

Although she was certain that she would refuse P'Din outright, her resolve began to waver after talking to Wayo. But that didn't mean she had changed her mind or decided to accept. As I said before, marriage is a very important milestone in a woman's life. Even if it was just a facade, it would still, in fact, be her first marriage.

"Dad, I really wish you would wake up soon, because I'm so confused right now."

"At this time, the lights in the room are still on. It seems like Khun Rose is waiting for someone."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't worry, Kaew. Today, I'm sure Rose won't forgive me."

"Is something going on, P'Din? Today I noticed that you were distracted by work, not very focused."

It was true. Kasama knew that her attention to work was not as it should be. She only had herself to blame for letting other problems invade her thoughts.
Since the morning, the tension with Tippapha, who avoided talking to clarify things, left her restless.
Furthermore, the fact that she had suggested marriage without explaining her reasons made Kasama worried that it might be misinterpreted or cause Tippapha to view her differently. “It’s nothing.”

"Do you think Kaew was right that I let P'Din drive alone tonight, even though she's the boss?"

"I don't see Kaew as just an assistant. To me, Kaew is a friend." "That's because you've always

been like this, kind. That's why the people close to you feel that way. My father says that everyone on the farm respects you a lot."

"You don't have to praise me so much. I'm not that amazing."

"Just the fact that P'Din paid for my treatment is something I'm very grateful for."

"It was my responsibility, Kaew. But what about the wound? It's getting better, isn't it?"

"Yes, it is. The swelling has gone down a lot. My wrist should be better in a few days, and then I'll be able to drive to P'Din again."

Machine Translated by Google

Afraid that Kasama wouldn’t believe that her condition was improving after the incident the night before, Kaew, who had undergone a medical examination on behalf of her boss, lifted her bangs to show the swelling on her forehead. Having worked together for years, Kaew acted naturally, not thinking that it might seem inappropriate for someone new to the farm. “P’Din!”

"Nong Rose?"

Kasama turned at the call, which sounded more urgent than usual. As if Rose was afraid she wouldn’t hear it, even though she was close by. Tippapha ran over to her and Kaew, who were talking in front of the house.

"Good evening, Khun Rose."

"P'Din is overloading Kaew with work, isn't he?"

"What?"

"It's almost midnight, and Kaew is still working tirelessly."

If she hadn't come out to ask directly, perhaps P'Din and Kaew would have continued talking until the next day. Why did they need to talk so much? From noon until now, almost twelve hours, and it still wasn't enough?

"It's nothing like that, Khun Rose. I'm used to working like this."

"Kaew seems to trust P'Din a lot."

"Yes, Nong Rose. I trust you completely..."

Machine Translated by Google

Kaew gave Kasama a discreet glance, as if asking her to deal with the situation. This made Kaew hesitate, as if sending a signal for Kasama not to explain further. Or had Kasama said something that sounded wrong to Tippapha, who was new to the environment and was still adjusting?

"But why hasn't Nong Rose gone to sleep yet? Today you came back later than usual."

"I'm waiting for you."

"Waiting for me? Why?"

"I want to talk about what we discussed earlier today. If we don't resolve this, I won't be able to sleep."

"Then I'll take my leave so you can talk in private."

"No need, Kaew. Since you're P'Din's close aide, you can stay and listen."

Kasama and Kaew exchanged confused looks. They didn't know why Tippapha wanted to discuss something so important at this moment, but if she insisted that Kaew could hear, it certainly wasn't something private.

"This morning, P'Din asked me to marry him."

"Nong Rose, about that... Let me explain..."

"No need to explain, P'Din. Just listen. I already have an answer."

"What?"

If she didn't want to hear explanations, Kasama could only imagine that the answer would be a refusal. Even so, she was already prepared to accept any decision. Still

Machine Translated by Google

So, I would need to find another way to resolve the situation later.

"I'll marry you, P'Din."

"..."

"Let's get married as soon as possible."

Chapter 5

Start of the official battle

“Nong Rose, this is Auntie. And this one is Nong Rose.”

“Hi, auntie.”

The afternoon of a new day began with surprises beyond expectations, after another important guest arrived at Saenrak Farm, intending to meet

Machine Translated by Google

with P'Din, accompanied by a person who could no longer avoid the situation. Even though Tippapha tried to dodge and stay away, since P'Din was nearby, she could not escape for long.

P'Din asked her to go out and talk to everyone.

Last night, she really couldn't sleep after she had blurted out those unexpected words impulsively. Not only did P'Din hear it, but her assistant, Madam Kaew, was also there and heard everything, ready to bear witness to what she had said that she wanted to marry Din as soon as possible.

Tippapha also didn't know why she had acted that way and said those words without thinking. Although she had been thinking and feeling confused all day, and had talked to Mrs. Wayo, it didn't make her understand the situation any better. But it only took her a few seconds to accept the proposal and commit to the marriage. Furthermore, Mrs. Kaew seemed very happy with the news and offered to help with the planning in any way she could. Then she hurried to tell everyone on the farm the good news before Tippapha had time to intervene, since Mrs. Kaew was the daughter of the chief of the workers.

Or if she shouted to Din, saying that the previous words had been caused by a possession, would she believe it and put the marriage aside?

And maybe that would make her seem like an indecisive person. But if she didn't say anything, she would also seem like a woman who was too easy. It was a difficult situation.

"Hi, are you the Nong Rose that Din mentioned she's getting married to?"

Machine Translated by Google

“Yes, that’s what she told me last night.”

“Did Din talk to Auntie about this yesterday?”

“Yes, after Nong Rose said that she wanted to quickly marry her, she was at a loss for what to do.
So after we parted ways, she went to look for Madam Kaew to ask, but Madam Kaew didn’t know what to say either, so she couldn’t help.”

Mrs. Kaew explained the situation from the previous night, which left Tippapha feeling confused and restless. After she gave such an unexpected answer about marriage, a person who had no experience with marriages like her was completely at a loss and had to ask for help from someone more experienced, like Mrs. Wayo.

Mrs. Wayo seemed to be the most experienced among them, as she often talked about marriage and future plans, but to her surprise, Mrs. Wayo said that she had never thought about it and advised her to ask for help from her cousin Apo, who was irritated at being interrupted during her rest. She explained that if she did not get enough rest, it would affect her work.

“Madam Kaew didn’t expect Nong Rose to be so impatient. This made Din anxious, not knowing what to do.”

“Madam Kaew, I can explain. P’Din and the wedding, I said…”

“Auntie has already made the list. The wedding can be organized in a week at most.”

The aunt seemed to understand her hesitation and concerns. She wrote things down in the notebook with clear and neat handwriting.

Machine Translated by Google

organized and, with the confidence of someone with experience, said to the girl:

“Don’t worry, Rose. I guarantee the wedding will be perfect. Trust in my ability, okay?”

“Are you the wedding planner?”

“No, dear Rose. I own a hotel and resort in Prachuap.”

“In our hotel, we have already organized hundreds of weddings.

it won't be difficult.”

“So, let’s begin! Tell me what Din and I should do.”

Tippapha watched the chaos around her, everyone so busy. Din and Apo were discussing the wedding seriously. Mrs. Wayo was busy trying to convince Mrs. Atjima to answer the phone. Everyone was so focused on helping her that who would dare say they didn’t want to get married now?

Although it was a fictitious marriage, she would become Din's wife in less than a week, becoming the owner of the Saenrak farm.

And she would always be P'Din's "Nong Rose" in the eyes of everyone around her.

"P'Din, you don't need to worry."

Machine Translated by Google

"I can't help but worry, Nong Rose, because this wedding is very important."

"I know, but we're not really getting married."

"Yes, I know we are not really getting married as a couple, but it is necessary for everyone around us to believe that. Otherwise, our plans and intentions may be in vain."

Kasama quickly glanced at the person in front of her, the owner of the beautiful face sitting in the car seat next to the driver. After a day of shopping in the city, including a visit to the wedding dress shop, she decided to take the opportunity to take the girl to buy what she was missing, before stopping by the last destination: the wedding shop recommended by Apo in Chiang Rai.

"P'Din, you mean...?"

"For Nong Rose's safety, no one can know that we are getting married out of necessity, not even the people closest to us. We cannot trust them too much. Because at this moment, we do not know if any of the 'Mahattanakorn' have anyone spying on them or passing information to them."

"Not even Moddaeng can know, P'Din?"

"Yes, it's important that Moddaeng believes that you are really marrying me."

"What about Mrs. Kaew? Aren't you going to tell her too?"

Tippapha asked in a teasing tone of voice. After hearing that she was forbidden from telling anyone close to her, she wanted to know if Din had a double standard. She never understood why she felt strange and unreasonable every time she

Machine Translated by Google

heard Kaew's name or saw the closeness between the two.
Ever since she had learned that Kaew was P'Din's assistant, someone she trusted very much, and had heard stories about her from Uncle Kla, Tippapha had been restless and unable to explain exactly what she felt.

She just knew she didn't like it.

I didn't like it and I didn't like it!

"I just told Kaew about the problem you have with the

Mahattanakorn, but I haven't told her about the fact that we're not actually getting married, and I don't intend to tell her."

"That's good, Din. We shouldn't trust those closest to us too much either."

"Besides you and me, only Kaew, Lom, and Fai know about this secret. Because you are my family, and I want everyone to accept Nong Rose as part of our family too."

"..."

"This way, Nong Rose will feel more secure knowing that she is not facing these problems alone."

Regardless of everything, P'Din had always cared more about others than herself. It was just like when they were children, she had always cared about Rose, even without realizing that she was showing affection. As a child, she had not been able to fully understand this affection, but now Tippapha felt that she could perceive P'Din's gentleness and kindness.

These feelings were not an obstacle for her.

Machine Translated by Google

As Moddaeng had told her, someone like P'Din could easily win anyone's heart. And she had also heard Kaew comment that all the farm workers loved Kasama, the owner of Saenrak Farm.

This meant that if she had the opportunity to be closer to her, perhaps someday she might fall in love with P'Din...

No, she wouldn't let herself be carried away by those feelings. She just needed to remember that she was getting married to cover up the situation, so as not to get involved and end up allowing her feelings to get too deep. After all, when everything came to an end, according to the agreement they made, she and P'Din would have to go their separate ways.

She wouldn't let her heart give itself to P'Din!

"It's done! I can't believe the wedding dress looks so good on you. Usually dresses need to be tailored, but this one fit perfectly, without any alterations. And it still looks beautiful, it suits you so well."

"Does this dress suit me?"

"It does match! It almost looks like it was made especially for you. If you choose this one, you will definitely be the most beautiful bride at the wedding."

Tippapha smiled shyly at the large mirror, feeling a little embarrassed after receiving so many compliments from the bridal shop employee. The reason she

Machine Translated by Google

Choosing a ready-made wedding dress was the urgency with which the wedding needed to be organized. With the time being tight, it would be impossible to have a custom-made dress made in time. Furthermore, Tippapha's situation did not allow for waiting any longer, as Wayo had anticipated.

The people on the farm side had been quiet lately, which made her feel strangely uneasy, as if it were the silence before a great storm. Because of this, she and P'Din needed to hurry up with the preparations to ensure that everything was done correctly and according to the law, without giving any room for the Mahattanakorn to interfere in any way.

"Is the dress okay, Nong Rose?"

"I'm coming, P'Din."

Hearing Din’s soft voice asking, Tippapha snapped out of her thoughts and walked over to her, lifting the hem of her dress to make it easier for her to move. She liked the wedding dress, which had a simple and elegant design: a dress with thin straps and a flowing skirt, which gave her a princess-like air, without exaggerating her body shapes like other dresses previously suggested. She had refused those, and Din helped her choose with the same taste.

"What do you think of this dress, P'Din?"

"It's beautiful."

"Then, I'll choose this one. On the wedding day, with makeup and hair, it will look even more beautiful. Today, I haven't prepared anything yet."

"Will it get any prettier than this?"

Machine Translated by Google

"What's this? Are you kidding me, P'Din? Today I just came to try on the dress, and now you're saying that I'm not pretty enough to match the wedding dress, right?"

"No, Nong Rose, you look beautiful."

"It's too late to praise now! You're afraid of being scolded, aren't you?"

Kasama looked closely at the younger woman who was approaching and stopping right in front of her, a short distance away. Tippapha playfully crossed her arms and looked at her with a defiant look, already knowing that her comment about “not being ready” could have been misinterpreted. She hadn’t really said she was ugly, just that she wasn’t fully prepared for the bridal look at that moment, but as always, she ended up not being clear, which led to misunderstandings. This was a weak point of hers, as she wasn’t very good at communicating.

Kasama, on the other hand, wanted to correct this, to avoid misunderstandings in the future. She thought that she should start correcting misunderstandings with her now.

"Even if the marriage is just a sham, the truth is that you are the most beautiful bride, Nong Rose."

"..."

"I already warned you, P'Din, that it's too late for compliments now!"

Machine Translated by Google

"You're back, Rose, Din! They bought a lot of stuff. Let Moddaeng help carry it into the house."

The pretty-faced woman stared at Moddaeng who quickly ran to grab several bags from the trunk of the five-door jeep, Din's favorite car.
Looking around, the farm had many cars, but the yellow jeep seemed to be Din’s most frequent car, especially when she traveled alone. Even Mrs. Kaew, when she worked with Din, used another car, as Auntie Chan said that Din was very protective of this jeep and wouldn’t let anyone else drive it.

"Moddaeng, where are the other people? I don't see any cars around here."

"Auntie Chan said her mother had an urgent appointment and went back to Prachuap. She said she will be back in three days to help with the wedding preparations. Mrs. Lom went to attend to some matter but did not say when.

would come back."

"Rose, let me hold it."

"Don't worry, Din. These bags are light, I'll carry them myself."

"No problem. I'll help."

"Rose and Din, there's no need to fight. I can handle it."

Tippapha glared at Moddaeng, who was trying to grab the bag that she and Din were arguing about who would hold. Moddaeng still gave her a mischievous smile that irritated her to the point that she almost wanted to slap her forehead to make her stop making that expression. But since she couldn't say what she thought, she had to let it go.

Machine Translated by Google

that everyone on the farm would believe that she and Din were really about to get married in a few days, as everyone had imagined.

"Din, look at Moddaeng! Now she doesn't even believe me.
This is going to be a lot of work."

"If Moddaeng has already helped with the bags, then let's go inside, Rose. That way we can have dinner."

Kasama spoke in a soft voice, and the beautiful bride nodded in agreement. She and Din began walking into the house, but the sound of a pickup truck approaching caught their attention. The vehicle parked in front of the house and the driver turned off the engine before coming towards them.

"Fai, why didn't you tell me you were coming?"

"Din, who is Rose?"

"It's me, hello Fai."

"Rose, if you're going to get married, come marry me."

"What?!"

"I won't let Din get upset because of me."

"..."

The beautiful woman quickly walked away, trying to compose herself after having to face Fai personally.
She had only seen Fai's image in photos, but the real person was quite different from what she imagined. Fai was much bolder and more direct than Apo and Wayo.

If Din was as firm and resolute as her name, Kasama, the aunt seemed to be the deep and reserved type of person,

Machine Translated by Google

like Apo, while Mrs. Lom, more outgoing and friendly, was well suited to the name Wayo.

"Let's not talk about this here, Fai. Let's talk in private."

"I have nothing to talk to Din about. I want to talk to Rose."

"Fai, please."

But who could have imagined that Fai would be so impetuous and direct, like his name, to the point of defying everything that had happened until now?

“Wasu! Stop! You can’t cause any more trouble now.”

“And you’re going to let Din act like a dog and take Rose away? There’s no way I’m going to let her marry Rose. Rose is mine!”

“There’s already a plan, right? Don’t forget that I trust you, but you’ve already failed twice.”

“I don’t care. I just want to finish Din off on her wedding day.
Anyone who dares to defy me will die.”

“Even if Din dies, you’ll still end up in prison.
Even with my contacts helping, with witnesses on the scene, do you think that will be enough to escape, Wasu?”

“Ah, damn it! Nothing goes as planned because of you, Din. I'm going to kill you.”

Machine Translated by Google

Wasu cursed, utterly frustrated and angry, after hearing the good news about the Watinwanich event, who must have been feeling victorious because they thought they had defeated the Mahattanakorn, spreading the news of the marriage far and wide. But if Kasama thinks she can easily get another man's bride, not only will she not get everything from Amornjinda, but she will soon end up dead.

“If you don’t want to end up in jail now, don’t cause trouble. You’ve escaped previous charges, but the police are keeping an eye on you, especially because Inspector Wayo is making things difficult. What you should do is keep quiet, Wasu. This time, I’ll take care of it.”

“What can you do? In a few days, Din is going to marry Rose, and she has already announced it to everyone, inviting many. She won’t back out or cancel unless she receives death as a gift. Then she’ll see that she messed with the wrong person!”

“Tomorrow I will talk to Kasama at Saenrak Farm.”

“And you think Din will want to negotiate with you?”

“Don’t worry, Wasu. I know her weak point that will make her give in.”

Wasu's father smiled with superiority. Even though Wasu looks like him, his father believes there is no comparison, as Wasu is still impulsive and makes hasty decisions, prone to mistakes. To accomplish something great, one needs patience.

Machine Translated by Google

“Let’s see if Kasama will let the Watinwanich honor be trampled and criticized just because of Thip’s daughter!”

"Fai, please."

"What's wrong, P'Lom?"

"Looks like you've stopped making faces at Rose."

"Fai isn't doing anything, don't jump to conclusions."

"Anyway, I'm going to marry Rose. We've talked about it, so I'd like you to respect my decision."

"I know, P'Din, P'Lom, and I'm cooperating, aren't I?"

Fai was helping out by volunteering to be the photographer and capture beautiful images at Saenrak Farm during the event. The next morning, he planned to photograph the atmosphere at Chomchan Farm so that the wedding would have a realistic feel. It was Khun Apo’s idea, who suggested decorating the event with beautiful photos of the couple. Wayo was the one who suggested that you, Atjima, help with the photography, because you like taking photos but don’t like being photographed.

"P'Din, can I ask you something?"

"Yes, Rose."

"Seriously, Din, does Fai hate me?"

"No, he just has a kind of serious face, but when he gets closer, he becomes friendly. He doesn't hate you."

Machine Translated by Google

Although, in reality, Atjima looks at her with an expression of dissatisfaction. If before she thought that P'Din had an impassive face and few facial expressions, when she meets Apo, who is even more serious, and Atjima, who always has an indifferent expression, she realizes that P'Din seems like a friendly person. Not to mention Wayo, who is always smiling, even Moddaeng says that she is charmed by Lom's smile, and she is already tired of hearing it.

"Khun Din, there is a visitor."

"Who is it? I already told Kaew that I wouldn't go to the office today."

"Kaew will bring the documents to you at the home office, and Mr. Wasupon has just arrived."

"Is he with someone? Wasu came?"

"No, he came with two assistants, and is now waiting in the drawing room."

"These guys had the nerve to come all the way here? They don't seem trustworthy, P'Din.
Let me go with you."

"No need, Lom and Fai, stay here with Rose. I'll leave her in your care, I'll talk to him alone."

Kasama declined Rose's offer of help and entrusted the handling of Rose to Wayo and Atjima, as he did not know whether Mr. Wasupon was there to cause trouble or draw attention. Furthermore, one could not underestimate the situation even if Wasu did not come.

"Are you going alone, P'Din?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Trust me, Rose, stay here with Lom and Fai."

Although she was worried and unable to rest easy with P'Din's assurance that she could handle the situation, Tippapha did not want to be a greater burden to her since she had been causing her a lot of trouble. She should follow P'Din's instructions for her safety and wait for her with confidence.

"Take care, P'Din."

"Are you here, Khun Kasama?"

"Hello, Mr. Wasupon."

"It's been a while since we saw each other. The last time must have been at Mr.

"Kiss."

"Yes, the last time I saw you was at my father's funeral."

Kasama remembered the words he had spoken, realizing that Wasupon intended to cause her some significant emotional loss.
However, she knew that Mr.
Wasupon mentioned these past events to highlight a great loss in her life. He intended to make her seem weak and susceptible, but this was a misjudgment, for she was strong enough to handle the situation and would face Mr. Wasupon and his son without fear.

If she had been afraid, she would not have taken direct action from the moment the news of the marriage was released until it reached the ears of everyone at Nabanan Farm. Because,

Machine Translated by Google

Obviously, the other side would not sit idly by and would certainly try to stop the wedding somehow. The fact that Mr. Wasupon had come to see her in person was not exactly unexpected.

"I believe you already know what you did, or at least you can guess why I'm here."

"I don't know, Mr. Wasupon. Perhaps you could explain clearly the purpose of your visit to Saenrak Farm."

"I came because of Mr. Thipakorn's daughter, whom you forcibly brought here."

"This information is definitely wrong. Rose came to Saenrak Farm of her own free
will. There was no use of force, as you might imagine."

"But what you did is not right. You took advantage of Mr. Thipakorn's serious illness to bring Tippapha here. It doesn't matter whether it was of your own free will or not, what you should know is that there was already an agreement between our families, intended for Wasu and Tippapha to marry."

"And why are you telling me this?"

Kasama maintained her composure, showing no emotions on her face, while Wasupon began to show irritation at being contradicted by her. Wanting to see how far Mr. Wasupon could maintain his role as a benefactor and while assessing his real intentions.

"To inform you that the marriage between you and Mr. Thipakorn will not happen, as long as the
Watinwanich family has honor and dignity to preserve, they will not violate the agreement with Mahattanakorn and Amornjinda,

Machine Translated by Google

agreed upon by previous generations, acting without scruples."

"But if the marriage is to the liking of both Watinwanich and Amornjinda, it cannot be considered disrespectful, right? A marriage based on past promises, only verbal and not recorded in documents, can easily be compared to Mr.

Thipakorn asking to leave Rose in my care before the accident."

If he wanted to use old promises as an argument, Mr. Thipakorn's recent request to Kasama carried more weight in reality. Therefore, the marriage between Kasama and Tippapha could not be considered an opportunistic act by the Watinwanich family, nor something to dishonor their reputation.

"If Mahattanakorn releases this to the public, you will only lose from it, don't let anyone say that Kasama is selfish and ill-mannered. Even if Mr. Kasidit and his mother are no longer here, don't make negative comments about them."

“...”

"Or is it that you, Kasama, are proud of being the one who steals other people's brides without shame?"

"The shameless and ill-mannered person is not Din, Mr. Wasupon."

Tippapha couldn't help herself and joined in the conversation, even after Wayo and Atjima tried to
stop her. Knowing that Din didn't forbid her from coming, she followed and heard how severe the accusations against Din were, unable to just listen.

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose."

"Sorry to overhear this conversation, but I need to defend the person I want to marry."

"What do you mean?"

"I will not marry Wasu for promises I never knew, and even if I did, I would not accept."

"And are you going to marry Kasama?"

"Yes, please inform Wasu. And if you don't mind, I'll invite you to the wedding as well."

"You just came back and you don't know him deeply..."

"Yes, I know it well enough. Despite the short time, I am certain."

Rose held Din’s arm, resting her head on his shoulder, intentionally showing affection. Under other circumstances, she might have hesitated, but she was determined to defend Din in the face of Mr. Wasupon’s harsh words, reminding him of the family’s teachings of politeness and courtesy.

If Kasama seemed defenseless at times, she was ready to protect Din in her own way!

“...”

"Because Din is the person I love and the person I'm going to marry."

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 6

The bright and sparkling bride

"Impressive, Rose. That answer left Mr.
Wasupol was a bit disconcerted. I bet he was stunned and that's
why he had to quickly leave the farm."

"Not quite, Lom. Compared to P'Din, I really haven't done much."

Tippapha said this modestly, thinking that her previous impulsive reaction was not something that deserved so much praise or appreciation. Compared to what P'Din had done for her, her actions seemed insignificant, and all she wanted was to protect someone who had been so good to her.

It was like when she confronted Mr. Wasupon without caring how rude her attitude might be in the eyes of the elders. After all, the person who had been disturbing and

Machine Translated by Google

The one who had been threatening her since she returned to the country was precisely Wasu, Mr. Wasupon's son, to the point that P'Din had to intervene to protect her. So who was it that hadn't been raised properly by their parents? She was sure it wasn't P'Din.

"But if you, Rose, hadn't spoken up, I was afraid that P'Din wouldn't be able to deal with the Mahatthanakorn family's people. Just hearing it made me angry, afraid that Din wouldn't be able to respond in time."

"P'Din, you're okay, aren't you?"

"Yes I am well."

Kasama snapped out of her mental confusion as if she had lost track of time and only regained her senses when Rose called out to her. Only then did she realize that she had pulled away from the sudden contact that had exposed the situation in front of Mr. Wasupon.

"But thinking about it, P'Din is really skilled, not only did he deal with Mr. Wasupon for so long, he also refused to greet and bid farewell to the guests."

Although she wanted to deny Wayo’s compliments, saying that everything that had happened was beyond her expectations and that she did not intend to start a fight or challenge Mr. Wasupon, her apparent immobility was probably due to Tippapha’s overwhelming attitude. Her closeness and sweet affection left her speechless, especially when Tippapha said that he loved her and wanted to marry her. Although she understood that Rose had said that to protect her, she could not help but feel confused and shaken.

Machine Translated by Google

"But I don't think they will give in or give up so easily. Mr. Wasupon is more unpredictable than Wasu.
P'Din, you must promise Rose that you will be more careful from now on."

"Yes, I promise."

"Even if I'm weak and can't protect myself, causing Din to worry, I'll protect you too. I won't let anyone hurt you, I promise."

Wayo turned and nudged Atjima, who was standing nearby, silent as if she wasn't part of the situation, before gesturing for her to look at Din. Although Wayo was the main mastermind and planner of the fake wedding, the excessive concern and promise of protection were beyond the plan.

Just like now, noticing Kasama's strange expression, undecided on how to react after Tippapha took her hands affectionately and offered a sincere promise.

"Fire accepts."

"What?"

"Fire says he accepts P'Din's marriage to Rose."

"Thank you so much for understanding the reasons."

"And I will also accept Rose without reservation."

"..."

What made Atjima change her attitude and accept her presence in such a surprising way, including the first genuine smile from the youngest of the Watinwanich family? She wasn't sure if it was a truly sincere smile, but

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha felt a chill down her spine when Atjima smiled at her.

"Little Rose"

"Huh? Are you referring to me, Fire?"

She looked around, left and right, and saw no one around other than herself. Still, to be sure, she thought she heard Fire's unexpectedly friendly voice greeting her. This was after yesterday's photoshoot had to be suspended due to Mr. Wasupon's unexpected arrival.

Today, they came to take photos in the flower field of their forest, Chomchan.

"Yeah, just me and little Rose here."

"Why did you call me little Rose? P'Din said I'm older than you."

"It doesn't matter how old you are. Someone as cool as me can call you little one."

"..."

It was true as P'Din had said, that when Atjima opened up to someone, she would be friendly. Tippapha had not expected this friendship to come so suddenly and surprisingly. And, more importantly, Fire was smiling at her again.

It was a smile that, even when smiling, seemed defiant!

"Did you come to tease Rose early this morning?"

Machine Translated by Google

"No, Lom. I just came to say good morning to our little Rose."

"Don't worry about it, Rose. Fire may look tough, but she's the most childish."

"And P'Din, where is he?"

Tippapha asked Wayo, who was chatting amicably with Atjima, before Atjima deflected and refused to be the older cousin when provoked.

The two were about to start a fight, but were interrupted by Tippapha, who asked about the important person that day.

"She said she would change her clothes and come. Look, there she is now."

"Sorry to keep you waiting, little Rose."

"P'Din, did you change your clothes?"

"Yes, yesterday I realized that the suit didn't match Rose's wedding dress very well. So I went to the store to get a new one."

"You didn't have to go to all that trouble. Why change and cause all this trouble, Din?"

"She's a perfectionist in everything, that's why, Rose. You'll get used to it."

I don't even need to hear what Wayo said, I've gotten used to Din's attention to detail. She always tries to combine and harmonize everything in the best way, even for a fake wedding. But it makes me feel warm and happy, almost as if it were a real wedding.

Machine Translated by Google

Rose didn't regret or feel sad about choosing to marry P'Din...

"Let's stop talking, otherwise the sun will be strong and the photos won't come out well, Din, little Rose."

"Little Rose?"

"Ever since earlier, Fire has been calling me that, Din."

Kasama gave a curious look as she saw Rose approaching
to strike up a conversation as they walked to the corner of the Chomchan Forest's flower field. It was the best spot to take photos, with a beautiful pavilion that was usually used by tourists visiting the farm.

It was a central setting surrounded by flower fields, a romantic location that Atjima suggested for the shoot after surveying the entire area. They said that this location was perfect for pre-wedding photos.

"Come a little closer, please. The way they are, the photos don't look like a couple."

"Now, is it okay, Fire?"

"Even closer, Rosa, Din. Just a little closer."

"Din, hug Rose, don't leave your hands at your sides.
Don't be stiff."

"Enough! You're all being demanding, Lom, Fire.
You need to respect Rose."

"It's nothing, P'Din. As long as the photos look realistic, I agree."

She felt sorry for Din, who was being held down by them and was so stiff that he looked like he was about to salute the national flag, as Wayo described.

Machine Translated by Google

P'Din had always been responsible, he had never taken advantage, nor had he dared to touch her without permission. Therefore, she simply clasped her hands in front of him respectfully.

"But..."

"It's okay, Din."

Even though she was allowed to, Din was hesitant, raising his arm without actually embracing her. So, she helped her by moving into her circle, smiling at Atjima's camera after finding the right position, like a real couple according to the briefing. But it seemed like a new problem had arisen.

"P'Din, smile a little. With that serious face, someone might think you don't want to get married."

"Lom, don't push her so hard."

"But Rose wants to see you smile too. Since I got back, I haven't seen you smile, Din."

"Someone as full of joy as Rose asking me to smile doesn't seem right. I've never seen that."

"Even if it doesn't look like it, Rose wants to see. Please, Din, smile for me. Say 'cheese' if you need to."

"Cheese....."

P'Din's hesitant smile might be funny to some, making Wayo laugh and Atjima almost fall backwards, but for Rose, **seeing Din smile...**

It made her world brighter and full of light instantly.

Machine Translated by Google

And finally the long-awaited day arrived. The wedding became the link that united the Amornjinda and Watinwanich families into one. Many guests came congratulate the two brides at today's event, with Kasama and Tippapha tirelessly welcoming guests. This included workers from both farms who came to express their joy for their employers.

“Rose dear, are you tired?”

“I'm fine, P'Din.”

“It was Aunt’s idea to hold a grand ceremony that would become the center of attention, suggesting that we invite many influential guests from society to witness the event. That way, the wedding could go off smoothly and without incident.”

“Your aunt, Kasama, and Fire planned everything carefully. After the event, Rose will have to thank everyone.”

Tippapha spoke to Din, who accompanied her to the reception with a smile of satisfaction, as all of Din’s family and friends helped her in every way they could. From her aunt who organized the wedding impeccably in just one week, to Wayo who came up with the plan to bring in plainclothes police officers to ensure security, to Atjima who took care of the photographs displayed at the event. Everything looked so authentic that it was hard to believe it was a fake wedding.

“Don’t worry, everyone did it willingly.”

“Even if you say that, I still feel a little embarrassed.”

Machine Translated by Google

“I already said that we are all part of the same family now."

"As?"

“From today onwards, Amornjinda will no longer be alone. Watinwanich will be by your side.”

“Thank you, Din. Even though our marriage is just a fantasy, I feel really safe.”

Truly safe, feeling Din's hand holding hers. Kasama's hands weren't as soft as hers, always cared for and never having done heavy work, but they still conveyed a gentle sense of comfort, security and the certainty that choosing to share life with her was the right decision.

Am I too caught up in the role of Din’s bride? “It’s a grand event, a flashy wedding that echoed throughout the district. I came to see for myself how big it could be.”

“No one can enter without being invited!”

“What do you mean? You want to stop someone who came to the event to offer congratulations?”

"Let them in."

Kasama intervened with the security guards who blocked Wasu and three of them from entering, as instructed, but Wasu's chatter attracted the attention of the guests.
Kasama decided to allow entry so that the event could continue smoothly.

“Rosa is a very beautiful bride.”

“Wasu.”

Machine Translated by Google

“What are you afraid of? I just came to congratulate you. Or are you afraid that you’ll be widowed right after you get married because I want to shoot you for stealing my bride?”

“Don’t do anything to Din!”

“I’m just kidding. Rose, don’t you have a sense of humor?”

But Tippapha did not find Wasu’s threats funny at all. She had not expected Wasu to come directly to provoke her on the wedding day. There was no sign of Mr.
Wasupon, only Wasu appeared confident and fearless.

“Are you going to pose for pictures or not? There’s a photographer waiting.”

“Come this way.”

Kasama moved Tippapha when he noticed Wasu approaching, protecting the bride and preventing her from feeling uncomfortable.

“Do you think that by inviting the governor I would be afraid of fighting?”

“If you want to cause trouble, try. I guarantee it won't be worth it.”

“I will get Rose back, even if I have to step over your body.”

“If you try anything, you’ll be the one who turns into a corpse before me.”

“You are a wretch for stealing my wife.”

“Rose was never yours and never will be. From today onwards, she is my wife. Memorize that, Wasu.”

Machine Translated by Google

“I swear you won’t have a happy ending, Din!”

Kasama maintained firm eye contact with Wasu, although the tension was present, the conflict was not favorable.
Wasu growled and sneered before retreating with his cronies, allowing the event to return to normal.

“P'Din, is everything okay? Did Wasu say something?”

“Nothing to worry about. Don’t worry, Rose. It’s all sorted out.”

From today onwards, I, Kasama, will not let anyone bother or hurt you again...

"They both exchanged rings with each other."

Today's wedding ceremony was organized in a simple manner, with the help of Ms. Keo as master of ceremonies, conducting the event as planned.
The time has come for both of them to exchange rings, chosen a few days ago to suit both of them.

However, the ring box that Din had recently received from his aunt seemed strange. It wasn’t the red velvet box they had chosen together, but one in a dark blue hue, which left Tippapha a little surprised since Din hadn’t mentioned it before.

"Give me your hand, little Rose."

“P'Din, this isn't the same alliance, right?”

“It wasn’t just the clothes I changed to fit you better, but I had my aunt look for a ring that would suit you even better.”

“But wasn't that too expensive, P'Din?”

Machine Translated by Google

“Since you, Rose, are the best thing in my life, I want to offer you the best.”

Tippapha admitted that she was very moved by Din's affectionate voice, leaving her at a loss as to how to respond.

She never thought Din was taking marriage as seriously as she was. She had turned something fictitious into a genuine display of affection, making her feel like the luckiest woman in the world.

“I’m so jealous, Rose! This diamond ring is so big! You can see it shining from here all the way to Chomchan Forest.”

A voice from the audience made everyone laugh, making Tippapha even more embarrassed, to the point that she almost couldn't put the correct ring on Din. She was nervous and inexperienced, but luckily, Din was calm and guided her every step of the way.

"Kiss! Kiss! Kiss!"

After the exchange of rings had gone well, people began to ask for a kiss, encouraging them excitedly as if everyone had arranged it.

At this point, Tippapha was at a loss for what to do, looking to Din for help. Din then made a signal to Mrs. Keo, the master of ceremonies.

"Din and Rose, how about a show of affection? With so many fans, we can't let you down!"

"..."

Instead of helping, Mrs. Keo incited the crowd even more, putting the two in the spotlight, with no way out.

“What now, Din? Everyone is looking at us.”

“Don’t worry, Rose, you don’t need to listen to others.”

Machine Translated by Google

“But they won’t stop cheering. And Wasu is staring at us.”

“That’s right, Wasu hasn’t left yet.”

“How about a little kiss on the cheek to make everyone happy?
After all, you lived abroad, this is just a normal greeting.”

"..."

To Tippapha, it may have been just a greeting, but to Din, it meant a lot.
They knew it was a fake wedding just to fool Mahattanakorn. After the event, Din would have to warn Mrs. Keo about the untimely pranks, making the situation uncomfortable.

“Quickly, P'Din, before the others get suspicious.”

“Rose, I don’t have the courage...”

A sharp cry of surprise echoed through the Chomchan forest, needing no smothering, as the beautiful bride, the chief worker, began the gesture, kissing Kasama lightly on the cheek, leaving a lipstick mark.
Tippapha stepped back to regain control of her racing heart, with no intention of showing possession.

But why did Kasama look ten times more affected?

"It feels like a dream."

However, the large diamond ring on her left ring finger reminded Tippapha that everything that happened

Machine Translated by Google

Today was real, not just a beautiful dream beyond her imagination. She never thought that her first marriage, even if it was a sham, would be so perfect and impressive to the point that she almost got carried away by emotions.

Even though she faced problems and difficult situations, there were still positive aspects that gave her hope and strength to face the challenges ahead. She really didn't know what would have happened if it weren't for the woman from the farm next door, P'Din, who was always willing to help and protect her. Otherwise, she might have ended up in a hellish situation at the hands of the Mahattanakorn family.

"Rose, can I come in?"

"Sure, no need to ask."

"It's in case you're not comfortable."

"But if anyone saw, they might be confused as to why Din would need permission to enter his own room."

Tippapha stood up to open the door and greet her, who had finished her duties on the busy wedding day. Din had suggested that she rest first after the event, as she still needed to bid farewell to some important guests and talk to her family members before heading to the room that would be used as the bridal chamber from today onwards.

"Rose hasn't taken a shower yet?"

"Not yet, Din. Getting married is more tiring than I thought, so I'm taking a break."

"I intended to organize my things and quietly leave to sleep in Fire's room. That way you can have the room to yourself."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't worry, Din. You can sleep in your room; I'll go back to mine, it's easier that way. That way you don't have to bother Fire."

"We can't do that. If anyone finds out, they might wonder why we're sleeping in separate rooms after the wedding."

"That's right, I forgot to think about that."

"Stay here, Rose. I'll find a way to get settled somewhere else."

She really felt guilty about all this care from Din, who was willing to leave his own room so as not to make her uncomfortable, even though, in practice, they were a newlywed couple. Not knowing how to solve it, Tippapha felt guilty and just watched as Din packed his things.

"Then I'll be going, Rose. Get a good rest, it's been a long day since early."

"You too, P'Din, get plenty of rest."

"Sure. Don't worry, I'll take a shower and go straight to bed."

Kasama said this to Tippapha before taking out a small bag with her necessary items. She planned to temporarily stay in the guest room Fire used until she returned to her hometown the next day. But she didn't expect to run into Auntie Chan in the hallway, who spotted her and immediately came over in a hurry.

"It's time for the wedding night. Where are you going, Din?"

"Ah... I'm thirsty, Aunt Chan, I wanted to drink some water."

Machine Translated by Google

"Then let me bring it to you. Come in and stay in the room. In the old days, on your wedding night, you couldn't go out walking around. Stay together until dawn."

“Then I’ll leave it to you. Thank you, Aunt Chan.”

"Do you need anything other than water? Let me know."

"No, just water. Thank you."

Closing the door softly, Kasama turned to Tippapha, who was smiling at her fondly, as if sympathizing with the situation she had been caught in when she had tried to sneak out of the room on their wedding night.
Tippapha generously proposed something that moved her.

"So how about sleeping here tonight, Din? You don't have to go anywhere else."

Feeling more and more touched, especially after the kiss given at the ceremony...

"What are you going to do, Din?"

"I'll sleep on the floor. That way, you can sleep comfortably in bed."

"No! You should sleep in the bed. Don't make me feel even more guilty about taking your room, Din."

Din had barely prepared to put the pillow on the floor when the girl intervened, not allowing her to give up her bed. After their wedding night, they needed to stay together in the same space to prevent

Machine Translated by Google

the others in the house suspected the fake marriage. In the end, after they both took a bath and changed their clothes, Kasama had to share the room with her "bride" without a choice.

"I don't think it's appropriate for the two of us to sleep in the same bed."

"But it wouldn't be right to let you sleep on the floor and wake up with a sore back, Din. You were just as tired today as I was at the ceremony."

"But..."

"If it's so uncomfortable, why don't we stay up all night talking and strengthening our relationship?"

"What?"

Why was Din so surprised and shocked by her suggestion? Didn't it make sense to suggest that they spend the night talking to get to know each other better? If she was too uncomfortable to sleep together because she wasn't used to it, then they could just talk endlessly until they ran out of things to talk about.

"Don't you want to talk until dawn, P'Din? That way, we can get to know each other better."

"You mean talk?"

"Yes, why? What did you think I meant?"

"Nothing. I think staying up talking is a good idea."

Kasama sighed in relief like someone who could finally breathe better. After Tippapha made room on the bed for her, they lay back together, while she

Machine Translated by Google

She talked tirelessly about her wedding day. Even though she felt exhausted and heavy-eyed at any moment, Kasama forced herself to stay awake because she wanted to hear everything the other had to say, and she had to answer Tippapha's curious questions.

"And you, Rose, besides roses, do you like any other flowers..."

"..."

But who could have imagined that the sleep she had been feeling for a while would turn into a state of alertness when she felt the head of the young woman next to her rest on her shoulder?
Kasama remained paralyzed, not knowing what to do, until she gathered the courage to adjust herself better and provide more comfort so that the young woman could fall asleep peacefully.

Although the one who said she wasn't sleepy was the first to fall into a deep sleep, after proposing to stay awake the entire night during their wedding night, it seemed like the only one who wouldn't be able to sleep due to the agitation would be Kasama.

"Sleep well, Rose."

And who else could it be but Kasama...

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 7

Happiness brought that person back one more time
time.

It was the morning of the first day of their married life, after a grand wedding ceremony that had taken place peacefully the day before. It was also a new morning when Tippapha woke up in a large bed in someone's room, not used to her surroundings. The owner of the pretty face who had just woken up looked around and was relieved to see that, this morning, she was alone in the room, with no sign of the person she had been talking to all night.

"Where did P'Din go?"

Machine Translated by Google

She didn't know when she fell asleep, nor did she remember what the last thing she talked about before falling asleep was. Besides, she hoped she hadn't done anything shameful or embarrassing while sharing the room on their wedding night.

Did she, without realizing it, drool, have a restless sleep, talk to herself or, in the worst case scenario, snore loudly from exhaustion? If that happened, she wouldn't know where to hide her face. That's exactly why she didn't want to sleep, but couldn't overcome her exhaustion.

"It's better to go ask P'Din to understand what happened."

Tippapha got out of bed quickly that morning and decided to look for the only person who could answer her questions. She thought that P'Din might be having coffee in the dining room or perhaps he was working in the office, like he did every morning before going to work.

But today, apparently, she was wrong, as the farm owner's routine changed completely after the wedding.

"Mrs. Rose, you're up early, huh?"

"Aunt Chan, have you seen P'Din? I went to check the office, but I didn't find her."

"P'Din is in the kitchen right now."

"Is P'Din really in the kitchen?"

"Yes, she woke up early in the morning. P'Din went to the market with his aunt and said he wanted to make breakfast for you."

Machine Translated by Google

"..."

While Tippapha was sleeping peacefully, she discovered that P'Din had woken up early, done something unexpected, gone shopping with Aunty Chan, and went to the kitchen to prepare food for her. If she was immersed in her role as a bride, P'Din was no less involved in the role of a newlywed.

Waking up to so much attention and affection on the first morning of her wedding left her emotional...

"Aunt Chan, is Rose awake yet?"

"It's not Aunt Chan, it's me, Rose."

"Rose!"

"Why are you so surprised? I heard from Aunt Chan that you were in the kitchen, so I wanted to come see for myself."

She wouldn't miss the chance to see a new side of Khun Kasama from Saenrak Farm, and Tippapha was ready to give P'Din lots of cute notes upon seeing her so dedicated in the kitchen with an apron, cooking for her.

"I wanted to surprise you. I didn't think you would wake up so early."

"You're being very discreet, P'Din. I bet rumors have already spread around the house that you're madly in love."

"You got it wrong, Rose. I wasn't acting."

"Then why are you making breakfast for me? It's usually Auntie Chan who does it."

"I wanted to do something special for you on our

first morning as a couple." **"..."**

Machine Translated by Google

P'Din is quite smart, to the point that she felt awkward after hearing his explanation. How could she refuse his dedication? Even if her food wasn't as tasty as Aunt Chan's, she, as an occasional wife, would eat it all so as not to discourage her.

"Are you hungry, Rose?"

"Not yet. Is there anything I can help you with?"

"No need. I want to do everything myself. You just have to wait to try it out."

"Whoever marries you, P'Din, will be very lucky. You take great care of people."

She was referring to P'Din's future real wife, someone who would marry out of genuine love, and not like her, who was a fake wife to solve problems that arose.

Just thinking about it made me feel a little envious of the person P'Din would love in the future!

"Actually, I planned to bring you breakfast in your room. But you woke up early."

"Like in soap operas? P'Din, you can be quite romantic."

"But since you're awake, we can eat in the dining room. I think my family should wake up to eat with us..."

"I'll pretend I'm back to sleep. When you're done cooking, you can bring it up to my room."

"Like this?"

"Seeing your effort, I don't want to spoil the surprise, P'Din."

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama looked at her as Tippapha spoke excitedly and left without giving any more room for questions. Then, she began to prepare breakfast with her limited cooking skills, something she only did on rare or special occasions, as this was usually Aunty Chan's daily chore.

"P'Din, you woke up early. I'm hungry, what's there to eat?"

"No, Lom, if you want to eat something, ask Auntie Chan to make it for you."

"And who is this breakfast for?"

"For Rose."

"So much food, she won't be able to eat it all.
Let me get a sausage..."

"You can't. Otherwise, Rose won't be happy. Get your own breakfast, Lom!"

Wayo scratched his head in confusion, seeing his cousin so protective of the food, already putting everything on the tray to serve his fake wife in the bedroom, while his younger cousin continued to complain about hunger.

"What are you doing here being nosy, Lom?"

"Fai, I think P'Din has changed."

"Are you delirious this early?"

"Seriously. I think P'Din can't tell the difference between fiction and reality anymore."

When they helped plan the fake wedding, they didn't imagine it would look so real that even those who knew the truth would be confused. Does P'Din remember that it is

Machine Translated by Google

just a fake marriage and who isn't really falling in love with sweet Rose?

"Even though your father forbade you, Wasu, from getting involved in their marriage, why did you go there disobeying his orders? Stop caring about that kind of woman. Rose is not suitable for you."

"I just went to say congratulations, I didn't go to cause trouble."

"Do you think your father doesn't know your true intentions? She's just a woman. You can find someone better."

Wasupol mentioned Paotiepakar's daughter with irritation after being snubbed by Tippapha in front of his elders for protecting Kasama. If Paotiepakar's daughter was that kind of woman, he would not consider her worthy of Wasu or of fulfilling the promise made by previous generations. It would be better to find a way to take the land of Chomchan Farm for himself and facilitate his business than to waste time on an insignificant woman.

"Actually, I just felt a little sorry. But I'm not that interested in Rose. If she didn't have the right to own Chomchan Farm, I wouldn't even look at such a bland woman."

"You know the Chomchan Farm issue is more important."

"I know. Besides, something that's defective, even if I get it back, I'm not interested anymore. You know it was

Machine Translated by Google

Rose was the one who betrayed me first. If I had her back, I would use her until I was satisfied and then discard her or pass her on to someone who wanted her."

"But she's already someone else's wife. Why would you ruin your reputation by trying to take her back?"

"Because now Rose's benefits have increased considerably."

Wasu smiled with an air of superiority in this game. If Kasama thinks that marriage is the best solution, she is mistaken, because, honestly, he does not even regret losing his fiancée to her. What matters are the benefits that will grow exponentially from now on, something that is worth much more to Mahattanakorn than what was lost.

"What do you mean by that, Wasu?"

"They must think that marriage will make Mahattanakorn give up, but the Watinwanichs are wrong and have made a strategic mistake. Because, not only will they not get everything they want from Amornjinda, but everything that belongs to Watinwanich, if Din is no longer in the world, will end up being Rose's. And when she no longer has Din to protect her, everything will come to us."

"Wasu, you are truly your father's pride."

"For now, let's let them be happy.

When they let their guard down, they will discover that the end is getting closer and closer!" If marriage brings

happiness as if you were in paradise...

Soon, I myself will make you descend to hell!

Machine Translated by Google

"Moddaeng, you said you would help put things away.
How long are you going to stare at me like that?"

"I still haven't recovered from the happiness. It seems like the couple I supported finally got together. All the effort to root for them was worth it."

"Those words give me a headache. Help me pack my things
quickly. P'Din must be waiting already."

"Miss Rose, one moment please. May I see the wedding ring up close?
Just once, it will bring me luck."

Tippapha sighed at Moddaeng's overreaction, and he quickly walked over to hold her hand and examine the wedding ring. After looking at the ring, Moddaeng focused on helping her finish packing.

"Are you satisfied now?"

"What did you do in past lives, Miss Rose, to marry someone premium like P'Din? Ouch!"

"I could have packed my bags faster myself than with your help, Moddaeng."

The beautiful-faced woman lightly slapped the assistant's
forehead to bring her back to reality. It seemed to work, as she and P'Din needed to travel to Prachuap Khiri Khan that afternoon with Apo.
Apo had suggested that she and P'Din stay at the resort she managed, part of the Watin Group empire, which was owned by Uncle Adisorn, Uncle Kasidit's second brother.

Machine Translated by Google

Initially, P'Din intended to decline the offer, as he knew she did not want to travel due to her concern for her father's health and the desire to visit him in the hospital every morning. However, Wayo commented that a honeymoon after the wedding would make it more convincing to others. Even though he had reasons not to decline, P'Din left the final decision up to her.

After some consideration, she accepted the offer and prepared to travel with Apo, believing that it would be a good opportunity to relax before facing future challenges. This was because Mahattanakorn would not easily give up on acquiring Chomchan Farm. Furthermore, Moddaeng promised to visit her in the hospital every day for the three days that she and P'Din were away.

"Miss Rose, did you sleep well last night?"

"What's up this time?" "It's

just that this morning I saw P'Din looking sleepy. She was already drinking black coffee early in the morning. That means you must have been pretty tired too, right?"

"Yes, I was so tired that I didn't even realize when I fell asleep."

"My goodness! You fell asleep without realizing it... looks like P'Din was very diligent in everything."

Tippapha looked at Moddaeng, who put her hand over her mouth with a funny expression, her mood changing rapidly. She was mumbling something unintelligible, and Tippapha decided to end the conversation by giving orders, as she did not want to waste any more time.

"Come on, pick up the suitcase and follow me, Moddaeng."

Machine Translated by Google

"P'Din and you, Rose, enjoy your rest in comfort, okay?"

"Thank you very much, aunt. This resort is very beautiful!"

"If there's anything missing or you need anything, you can call your aunt without hesitation. I'll ask the staff to sort it out."

"I like you very much, aunt."

Kasama thanked her, who took care of all the details of the wedding so that everything went perfectly well.
In addition, she also helped to arrange their honeymoon stay. It was clear that the aunt, despite having a busy life and rarely having time to meet her siblings, did her best to solve the family's problems.

"The ball was brought back. However, while the boss was away, some small problems arose."

"Let's talk about this in the office, so as not to disturb the customers here."

Before he could finish speaking, the head of the Watin Group was called by his assistant as soon as he entered the resort. It didn't take long for him to realize the influence of his only daughter, Apo, who was also highly competent and responsible for the growth of the Watin Group company.

"You work all the time, don't you?"

Machine Translated by Google

"The life of an heiress and hotel manager is just like that. I already knew it would be like that."

"You are amazing. You can organize everything perfectly, even if it's complicated."

"Among the four siblings, the aunt was always the most intelligent. If she hadn't studied hotel management, she would probably have been a doctor. When we were children, while others were playing, she liked to read. Her memory was so good that if you asked her something, she would probably answer right down to the decimal point."

"Wow, I believe that! But you were also very good at studying, weren't you? I remember."

As they walked to their exclusive cabin at the resort, Rose and she talked about the past. They remembered their academic achievements and how special their family was.

"Rose, do you still remember this?"

"Yes, I remember when we were kids, you were the best student in the class. You always stood out."

"Now things have changed a little, maybe I'm not as good as I used to be.
But you probably don't know that because you went to study abroad."

"That's impossible! You've always been talented and you still are."

"What about you, Rose? Tell me about your experience abroad. We didn't have time to talk last night, did we?"

Machine Translated by Google

"It's true. Yesterday I was so tired that I ended up falling asleep before telling you."

Rose thanked the resort staff who led them to their private chalet. Although it was night and the ocean view was not so clear, she was looking forward to enjoying the next few days of their honeymoon.

"Last night you were very tired."

"And while I was sleeping, I didn't dream or talk anything in my sleep? Tell the truth, if something funny happened, you can tell it."

"No, you slept straight through! You didn't talk or snore."

"Great! Then we can continue our conversation tonight."

"Okay! Now I'm going to take a shower first."

"Feel free. Leave the clothes for me to put in the closet later."

"Are you really going to go through my suitcase?"

"Of course!"

"It's okay. I have no secrets from you, Din."

With that, Rose trusted her completely and had nothing to hide. However, she soon realized that there was something embarrassing in her suitcase: underwear. She tried to stop her, but it was too late.

"My underwear! You didn't have to touch that."

"I only picked it up because it was in the middle of the clothes I folded."

Machine Translated by Google

"It's okay, I'll fix it myself!"

Even though they were women, Rose was embarrassed to see her going through her personal belongings. She ran to the bathroom, trying to hide her red face in embarrassment.

"Rose, the bathroom doesn't have a curtain!"

"Did you look properly?"

"I did look, but it's just a transparent glass that you can see from the room."

Rose was shocked to realize that the glass was completely transparent, leaving her with no privacy!

Since arriving at Apo's resort, she has been in nothing but embarrassing situations, exposing herself and making mistakes in front of Din several times, to the point that Tippapha didn't even know where to hide her face. In addition, the bathroom in the house where they were staying put them in an uncomfortable situation, forcing the two of them to take turns using it, while the other waited outside, sitting on the balcony. Normally, Apo lives alone and doesn't care much about privacy, but for her and Din, who aren't really a couple, ignoring this would be strange.

Today, she decided to cancel the conversation they planned to have late into the night, preferring that each of them sleep in their already divided part of the room. Since they are both women, sharing the bed would not be strange, considering their sisterly relationship. She did not know if Din

Machine Translated by Google

I thought the same way, but for her, who suggested the deal, it didn't seem as simple as she said.

The pretty-faced young woman remained lying on her back, not daring to turn to the side where Din was.
Minutes passed, perhaps ten, perhaps thirty, and she remained motionless, afraid of disturbing her. Finally, Tippapha gathered the courage to turn and look at Din, who was standing a few feet away. It was then that she realized that the silence in the house was due to the fact that she had already fallen fast asleep.

“P’Din slept before Rose today,” she murmured softly, not wanting to disturb Din, who was probably dreaming. In recent times, even though it had only been fifteen days since her return to Thailand, Din had faced a lot of trouble because of her. It seemed like they had been through a lot together in such a short time. And looking to the future, she knew that they would need to be united to face the challenges that awaited them, especially with the powerful Mahattanakorn family, who would not give up easily. Din, who had always protected her…

And Rose, who now wanted to protect her...

"Thank you," she whispered.

It was a thank you she had said dozens or hundreds of times since they had met again, but Tippapha knew that everything Din did for her went beyond the call of duty, without expecting anything in return. Even though she was not his wife or true lover, Din had done a lot for her. And in return, she wanted to do her best to repay him.

With that, the young woman brought her hand to Din's face, gently touching his cheek without realizing it, or perhaps

Machine Translated by Google

giving in to an impulse she couldn't contain. Unintentionally, she ended up stealing another moment. Just like on the day of the fake wedding, when she gave him a kiss on the cheek, this time without lipstick marks, but still with the clear intention of expressing her feelings. She then brought two fingers to her lips and then touched the same place where she had left a mark the day before.

"Good evening, P'Din."

She wanted to reinforce that memory, so that it would never disappear...

“Little Rose!”

“Is everything okay? Why do you have that worried expression, P’Din?”

“I came home and didn’t find you there, Rose. Plus, you didn’t take your cell phone.”

Kasama breathed a sigh of relief when she found the young woman. She had been worried when she woke up and found Tippapha not at home, especially when she realized that her cell phone was there. She quickly went out to look for Rose, who was out for a walk. The difference between Rose, dressed in a floral dress ideal for a stroll on the beach, and her, who looked like she had just run out of the house, was obvious.

“I just wanted to get some fresh air, but I ended up walking all the way here,” she explained.

Machine Translated by Google

“Next time, let me know first, okay? That way I won’t have to worry.”

“Sorry, I'll let you know next time, P'Din.”

“I brought you to Prachuap thinking it would be safe here, but I don’t want you to walk alone. You never know when these people might try something again.”

“I really hope these troubles will end soon,” Tippapha said, her tone wistful as she thought about the hardships she was facing. She knew there was no clear answer as to when it would all end, nor was there any guarantee that miracles would happen, such as seeing her father wake up and talk to her again. What she wanted most was a peaceful and happy life with her father, away from trouble. However, her hope had been shattered by those who were determined to harm her.

“I believe that anyone who does something bad will end up getting what they deserve,” Din said.

“What if this takes a long time? If the laws do not punish the guilty and justice does not happen, what can we do?
I don’t want to go through any more losses.”

“Luck will not always be on the side of the guilty. But we need to be patient and stay calm. If we act rashly, we may end up making mistakes.”

“Maybe we should put our worries aside for now. After all, we came here to relax, right? I shouldn’t bring up this kind of topic.”

“Honeymoon, huh? What honeymoon are you talking about?”

Machine Translated by Google

“I meant a disguised honeymoon so people would believe it,” Rose replied, with a shy smile.

The two continued walking together, admiring the view of the sea. Although they didn't act like romantic couples who walked hand in hand along the beach, just being there together, in a peaceful environment, was enough to bring relief to both of their hearts.

“The sea is so beautiful, it looks like a painting,” said Rose.

“This place really is beautiful.”

“Did you used to come here before?”

“I haven’t been here in a long time, ever since my father passed away,” Din replied sincerely.

“May I ask why?” Rose asked.

“After my father left, I had to take over everything on the Saenrak farm. I spent years learning and dedicating myself to the work, with no time to rest or think about myself.”

“Maybe that's why you've matured so much, P'Din.
You have become very responsible, unlike when I was little. Did you know that everyone on the farm admires you? As for me, I feel like I still have a lot to learn.”

Despite all the responsibilities and hardships, Rose admired Din for his strength and dedication. She wished Din could be kinder to himself and find more happiness.

“If you need anything, you can always count on me,” Din assured.

Machine Translated by Google

“So, I want to ask you something. Promise me that you won’t overwork yourself to the point where you can’t find happiness,” Rose said.

“I promise I will do my best to find more happiness.”

“If you break that promise, I’ll complain a lot,” she joked.

“You can complain all you want,” she replied with a smile, a rare moment of levity.

Din remembered how before she had seen no purpose beyond her work. But now, looking at Rose, she felt like she had found something worth fighting for. It was as if she was slowly beginning to regain the glow of her former joy, something she hadn’t felt since the loss of her father.

“My happiness is being able to care for and protect you, Rose,” she said, with a genuine smile coming from the bottom of her heart.

Chapter 8

Taking the position of wife number one.

"Does little Rose want to go for a walk somewhere today?"

"I'm not a local. I don't know what places are interesting to visit in Prachuap. I'll let you choose, P' Din."

"I'm not an expert either. At first I was going to ask P'Nam, but today she went out to take care of business in

Machine Translated by Google

somewhere else. She just said that if you and I, Rose, want to go somewhere, just let the driver she arranged to take us know."

"So, I'll look online to see what places are recommended to visit."

Kasama nodded in agreement, following the wishes of his wife, Tippapha. Since morning, we had been sitting and enjoying the delicious breakfast prepared by the resort without rushing, because now it was time to relax and we were not at Saenrak Farm. She did not have to rush like she did every day and could have breakfast at her leisure, admiring the sea view and listening to the sound of the waves.

"Today, I want to visit a temple and then have lunch at a famous restaurant. In the afternoon, we can go back to the resort to rest, and in the evening, go to the night market to stroll and shop. How about it?"

"As you wish, Rose."

"What's this? P'Din always agrees with me. I suggested the plan so you could help me think of ideas. You always agree with what I say. How do I know whether or not you like the things I plan?"

"I like everything you plan, I don't see any problem."

Tippapha rested her chin on her hand as she stared at her wife, trying to find something wrong because she always agreed with her too much.
That was good for her, but maybe it wasn't good for P'Din. We came to travel together, to take vacations together, so

Machine Translated by Google

we should collaborate on ideas. But P'Din just smiled softly and never disagreed with her on anything.

"P'Din, the two of us will probably be together for a long time, won't we?"

"Hm?"

"If you agree with everything I say and don't express your own wishes, in time, you will feel uncomfortable. But if you change from always agreeing with me to speaking openly, we can live together with understanding, don't you think?"

"Do you want me to be direct?"

"Yes. Even though our marriage is fake, for the well-being of both of us, I don't want you to say one thing and feel another. I don't want you to keep secrets from me."

"What makes you happy makes me happy too!"

"..."

P'Din is too persistent. Rose won't talk to P'Din anymore!

She would say that her happiness is protecting her, and now she's saying that what makes her happy also makes P'Din happy. I just asked her to be honest, not to come up with sweet words or clichés that make her sensitive for no reason.

Although on the outside, Rose may seem a little fragile...

Inside, she is strong and does not give in to anyone easily.

Machine Translated by Google

"That takes some of the edge off. I thought we'd get lost again."

"If P' Din gets lost again, we'll switch. P' Din will be responsible for seeing the way, and Rose will drive."

"Let me drive. You just need to help me with the directions."

Because Kasama did not want to discourage his wife by saying that the first time they got lost and their plan to visit the temple was delayed, it was because Kasama had gotten confused when giving directions. By the time she told them to turn around, they had already gone far off the road. It took them a long time to find their way back and reach their final destination.

"If you don't know your way around here well, why didn't you let the resort's driver drive?"

"Driving alone is more private, don't you think? You can ask to stop wherever you want without having to worry about the driver."

"It's true. I've asked you to stop at several places. Look, P' Din always gives in instead of stopping me."

"I won't stop you."

Tippapha spoke as if he realized that he had given P'Din a lot of work, making her stop for bathroom breaks or at cute cafes along the way to get drinks and sweets. But she didn't complain, and always seemed willing to accommodate his requests. If he had been Apo's driver, he would probably be complaining about his cousin for being so demanding.

Oops! She shouldn't refer to herself as sister-in-law so advantageously in something fictional...

Machine Translated by Google

"Shall we visit the temple now? The sun is getting strong, and if we stay in the sun for too long, Rose might get sick."

"Let's go. There are a lot of people here. I think this must be a famous temple, as the travel blogs recommend."
But I didn't see any reviews warning that the stairs were that long."

At this time, there were many tourists on holiday, including international tour groups. The area around the stairs leading to the worship spot at the top was crowded, with no room to hold the handrails on either side.

Plus, the small-heeled sandals she was wearing weren't as comfortable as P's sneakers.
Din. If she had known that she would have to walk so much or climb so many stairs, she would have worn sneakers too.

"Are you able to walk okay? If not, you can hold on to my arm, Rose."

"Do you want me to hold your arm P' Din?"

"That way you can walk better."

"Can I hold your hand instead of your arm? Holding your arm still doesn't feel safe."

She said P' Din was very good at following what she wanted.
She had always been very kind to Rose, even before they were together because of their fake marriage or even before they had rings on their left ring fingers to symbolize their commitment. But after they were married, when Rose asked for something, she would stop offering her arm and instead hold out her hand for her to put hers in, before holding on tight and walking up the stairs together.

On the way back... Rose will look for another excuse to hold her hand again.

Machine Translated by Google

"Mrs. Rose, Mr. Din, are you back yet?"

"Moddaeng, you have amazing hearing! The car just arrived. I haven't even turned off the engine yet and you're already here to greet us."

"Mrs. Rose, Moddaeng is not a dog, you know? Is there anything I can help you carry?"

"Help bring the things from the trunk into the house. And this bag here is a gift I bought especially for you."

"Thank you! Moddaeng loves Ms. Rose, you are the kindest!"

Tippapha watched as Moddaeng quickly picked up the gift bag that she mentioned was a special gift for the person she had entrusted with an important task.
Moddaeng took care of visiting her father in the hospital during the three days she was away from Chiang Rai and kept Tippapha updated on the situation, allowing her to enjoy her trip without worry. Compared to the gift, it was a small kindness.

"Moddaeng is always so full of energy."

"Sometimes Rose thinks Moddaeng is a little hyperactive." "It's good that

Moddaeng takes good care of young Rose. That way, she can help out when I'm busy."

"Why do P' Din and Moddaeng think Rose is a little kid? I'm already an adult!"

Machine Translated by Google

"I don't see young Rose as a child. I'm just worried about you."

She was so concerned about the person who mattered most to her that she didn't want to let her out of her sight if she could. But Kasama knew that it wasn't practically possible to keep an eye on Tippapha 24 hours a day, as they both had responsibilities on the farm. So when they had to be apart, Kasama felt relieved knowing that Moddaeng was taking care of the other party, as instructed.

"But don't worry too much. While we were in Prachuap, P' Din promised not to forget."

"Yes, I won't forget what I promised."

"Why are you smiling? You look so happy like this, P' Din."

When questioned by her beautiful wife, Kasama kept smiling while Tippapha glared at her mischievously. This was another request Tippapha had made: that she smile whenever she was happy, and Kasama really only wanted to smile because she was so happy.

"Can't I smile?"

"Rose never said P' Din couldn't smile."

"You said you wanted me to smile more from now on."

"But smiling for no reason, at least tell me why you are smiling."

"I am expressing my happiness."

"Stop pretending! If anyone sees you, I won't help you if they say you're out of your mind."

Machine Translated by Google

"Um, sorry to interrupt, but if Mrs. Din and Mrs. Rose continue in this romantic mood, Moddaeng won't be able to get the things out of the trunk."

She didn't want to interrupt the bosses' romantic moment, especially as the farm couple's biggest supporter. But there were still a lot of things in the car to be taken inside, so it was best for them to stay inside the house so as not to expose themselves to the sun.

But still, the afternoon sun didn’t seem to be able to melt them any more than the sweet love between the newlyweds. After returning from their honeymoon in Prachuap, they seemed to have turned the sea waters into syrup with the love they shared. It’s not known exactly how much they enjoyed their honeymoon, but Moddaeng could tell that something had changed since they left a few days earlier.

"Hey! Talk more respectfully to P' Din. She's not your friend."

"Moddaeng is telling the truth. No one on the farm thinks Mrs. Din is out of her mind, on the contrary, everyone thinks she is in love."

"Moddaeng! Don't go hiding inside the house. Come apologize to P' Din now."

"No need, young Rose. I don't take what Moddaeng says seriously."

"But Moddaeng has gone too far. She won't even leave P' Din out. I'll have to reprimand her."

"It's just a small thing. Don't worry about it, I've already let it go. Besides, it's actually good for us that Moddaeng thinks that way."

Machine Translated by Google

Letting Moddaeng believe that P'Din was madly in love and letting her spread this rumor throughout Saenrak Farm and even Chomchan Farm might be advantageous for a newlywed couple, as P'Din mentioned. But it would certainly embarrass Tippapha if all the workers began to see her as P'Din's cherished wife.

"Let's go inside. I'll ask Auntie Chan to prepare your favorite dish for dinner. You must be sick of eating seafood."

"You understand me so well! I'm just in the mood for some northern food made by Auntie Chan."

Tippapha responded excitedly when P'Din mentioned the dinner prepared by Aunty Chan. Although they had enjoyed delicious meals, especially seafood in Prachuap, no food could compare to the dishes prepared by Aunty Chan. Even compared to the meals prepared by the cook at her father's Chomchan Farm, Aunty Chan was a clear winner. Tippapha enjoyed the food so much that she was gaining weight there.

"Mrs. Din, Mrs. Rose, hello! Are you back from your honeymoon?"

"Yes, Khun Kaew. Rose and P' Din brought souvenirs from Prachuap for you. Please come and get them inside the house."

"Thank you very much, Ms. Rose. But I'll leave the remembrances for later. I wanted to talk to Ms. Din about work. I apologize for interrupting your personal time, but this is really urgent."

Machine Translated by Google

"What's the rush, Kaew? I thought I had everything sorted out before the trip."

"Mr. Suwan's resort wants to cancel direct supply from Saenrak Farm."

"But Mr. Suwan is an old customer, we've never had any problems. Why does he want to cancel all of a sudden? Did he give any reason?"

"Mr. Suwan did not give specific reasons, only mentioned that he would switch to a new supplier."

"Then I'll have to go to the hotel and talk to him directly today. Kaew, prepare the documents and I'll go meet him."

Kasama decided to deal with this major challenge immediately by going to talk to the important client and finding out the reasons for Mr. Suwan’s change of mind, despite many years of good business and the hotel’s satisfaction with the price and quality of the agricultural products provided. The only possible reason for the cancellation would be a personal matter.

"P' Din, is there anything I can help you with?"

"I think I can handle it, but I might be late tonight and not have dinner with you if I have to talk to the client for a long time."

"P' Din, don't worry about me. Focus on solving the problem.

I hope everything works out. I'll wait for good news at home."

"After work, I will return home as soon as possible."

Machine Translated by Google

The beautiful wife watched as Kasama rushed to get into the office immediately. It seemed that P'Din's vacation had ended the moment they returned to Saenrak Farm, and work had called her before she had even entered the house to rest.

"Mrs. Rose, why haven't you come home yet? Wow, Mrs. Din left so quickly?"

"P' Din went with Khun Kaew."

"And you let her take Mrs. Din like that? It's her day off!"

"She had an urgent matter to attend to. How could I stop her, Moddaeng?"

At first, I intended to continue the question to Mrs.
Rose, but seeing the somewhat sad expression of the owner of Saenrak Farm, Moddaeng closed her mouth, fearing to anger her even more.
Not long ago, she was so happy by Mrs. Din's side.

Maybe Mrs. Din's weakness is that she's a bit of a workaholic?

"Mrs. Rose."

"What's up, Moddaeng? If you're about to tell me to go to bed again, go to sleep first."

"No, I'm not sleepy. If Mrs. Rose wants me to wait for you,

Machine Translated by Google

Mrs. Din, I can hold on until morning."

"Then watch TV. There's that favorite drama of yours, right?"

"I can watch the drama later. Now there's something more interesting."

Tippapha looked at Moddaeng who was watching her intently.
This evening, Moddaeng had offered to wait for P' Din to return home with her after the owner of Saenrak Farm had left to meet a client named Mr. Suwan with her assistant Khun Kaew.

P' Din didn't have dinner with her and didn't reply or send messages to let her know when he would be home. She just waited without knowing what to do, as she didn't want to be too annoying as a fake worried wife.
Still, without Din coming back, it would be difficult to fall asleep.

But being worried to the point of looking silly wouldn't be good!

"Every time Moddaeng says it's interesting, it always sounds like nonsense to me."

"But this time, I have been quietly observing for a while and I am quite confident."

"What is it then? Tell me, but if it's nonsense, I'll send you to bed."

"It's about Mrs. Din and her assistant, Khun Kaew."

"Why? What's between P' Din and Khun Kaew?
Moddaeng, be quick and tell me everything!"

Seeing how serious she was, Moddaeng laughed at her anxiety. But it was serious to Tippapha; if Moddaeng was joking, Tippapha would be really upset.

Machine Translated by Google

"See? As soon as I mentioned Khun Kaew, Ms. Rose already showed a reaction. How could Moddaeng not be confident?"

"And why not? I'm just curious about what you found out. If it's related to P' Din, as his wife, I should know, shouldn't I?"

The beautiful woman crossed her arms and raised her chin in a proud attitude.
Even though she was anxious, she didn't want to show it to Moddaeng to the point where it would be noticed. Since Moddaeng didn't know about the fake marriage, she referred to herself as his wife to find out the truth.

"Well, since Mrs. Rose is the mistress of Saenrak Farm now, anything that happens, you need to know.
Moddaeng will always report on everything, so you don't need to worry."

"So, what is it about P' Din and Khun Kaew anyway?"

"Moddaeng just finds Ms. Rose adorable. You may not realize it, but her behavior is very obvious. It seems like Ms. Rose is jealous of
P'
Din and Khun Kaew."

"What nonsense! Why would I be jealous? Khun Kaew is just P' Din's assistant."

"Well, even if you were jealous, that wouldn't be wrong. As a wife, perhaps you don't want P' Din to get too close or go out alone with other women, even if they are just assistants. Moddaeng is right, isn't she? That's why you act strange every time she works with Khun Kaew.
You even wait for her to come home."

Machine Translated by Google

"I... I'm not a fool, Moddaeng!"

Tippapha knew deep down that there was something there; she felt something seeing P' Din getting close to Khun Kaew. Even though she knew it was just work, there was still an uneasiness. And when Moddaeng mentioned it, she could no longer deny it, looking guilty.

But how could she be jealous of P' Din when they weren't really in love, and she wasn't even his real wife? If Din knew, she was afraid that Din would look at her with doubts.

"It has nothing to do with being foolish. When we love or like someone, it is natural to protect the people we care about. P'Din would never betray or hurt Mrs.
Rose, but as a wife, show everyone that you are a happy couple. Make it clear that P' Din is so loved that no woman dares to approach her."

"And what should I do, Moddaeng? I have no experience in this."

"Who am I, Ms. Rose? I'm the former popular girl from Chomchan Farm, Moddaeng! I won't let you down. I'll give you strong tips on how to be P' Din's number one."

"..."

For some reason, it feels comforting?

But for now, besides Moddaeng, she had no one else to turn to.

Machine Translated by Google

"How lucky, Mrs. Din, that you managed to come to an understanding with Mr. Suwan."

"Losing a good customer like Mr. Suwan would have a huge impact on the farm."

"But where did this information come from that says our products were contaminated? Who spread this, if we had no problems for years?"

"I can't conclude yet, Kaew, but there are suspicions."

"You suspect the Mahattanakorn, right?"

"I don't have many enemies."

Kasama did not specify anything without evidence. He could not accuse the

Mahattanakorn for tarnishing the name of Saenrak Farm.
Apart from them, she had no other enemies. If she hadn't helped Tippapha, her farm wouldn't be in so much trouble. However, she was willing to resolve each issue calmly and be more attentive to the next moves.

"You should take a nap, Kaew will wake you up when we arrive."

"I am not well."

"But you drank a lot with Mr. Suwan."

"I couldn't refuse. Drinking while we talk makes it easier between us."

"Arriving so late, Mrs. Rose must be worried about you."

"No, when I left Mr. Suwan, I sent a message saying I was coming back."

Machine Translated by Google

"So she's waiting for you?"

"Yes. That's why I tried to finish everything before it got too late; I don't want Mrs. Rose waiting for me."

Kasama's serene face spoke of his wife with a smile without realizing how her expressions had changed so much. Kaew, who was at the side, saw how the change did not go unnoticed.

"When you talk about Mrs. Rose, you sound so happy. I haven't seen you like this in a long time."

"Because Mrs. Rose brought happiness back into my life."

"P' Din, are you drunk?"

"Rose..."

"Ms. Rose, Ms. Din had a lot of drinks with Mr. Suwan."

"Thank you, Khun Kaew, for bringing P' Din back home."

Tippapha spoke to P' Din's assistant, who brought his wife back home safely. She went to help support P' Din out of the car, making sure she was able to stand on her own, despite being a little drunk.

"Don't worry, I'll help Mrs. Rose take Mrs. Din into the house."

"No need, Khun Kaew. Go rest too. I can take care of P' Din by myself."

Machine Translated by Google

"Are you sure, Mrs. Rose? I can help..."

"Let P' Din's wife handle this, Khun Kaew.
Everything is fine."

The beautiful woman politely refused the help, causing Khun Kaew to hesitate and not come any closer. She supported P' Din into the house, a little awkwardly, but Din helped by walking on his own. If she was so drunk that she couldn't walk, she would have to swallow the pride she showed Khun Kaew out of jealousy, just like Moddaeng suggested.

But was Moddaeng's suggestion really a good one?

"P' Din, what a mess, coming home late and smelling of alcohol."

"Rose..."

"Don't even try to argue. You can't even walk straight now."

"Sorry."

"Do you think that if you speak softly like that I'll stop complaining?"

P' Din deserved to be reprimanded for keeping Rose waiting so late that Moddaeng had given up and gone to bed. What if Tippapha had given up too and gone to bed without waiting? If her fake wife hadn't been there to take care of her, would Khun Kaew be responsible? That would make her furious. Accusing her of being

Machine Translated by Google

exaggerating or assuming too much, but Rose couldn't stand it.
It was a question of dignity.

After such a publicized wedding and a diamond ring on her finger, anyone who didn't know that P'Din was married and still approached or flirted with her would know that she wouldn't tolerate it. If that happened, Tippapha wouldn't hesitate to act as the owner of Saenrak Farm to bring order to everything.

Wait! Maybe it was Moddaeng who convinced her to overact in the role?

"Go to bed, P' Din. I'll clean your face."

"No need, Rose. You'll be bothered by the smell. I'll sleep in another room."

"I'm tired, P' Din. I've already brought you to the room, and now you want me to take you to another one?"

"I can go alone."

"Then go on your own. I'm tired and I won't accompany you."

She wanted to see if P'Din could actually get up from the bed she had just laid down to rest in. If she insisted on sleeping in another room and upset Auntie Chan or the other people in the house, she would let her try until she got tired.

"P' Din, see? It's going to end up falling... Ah!"

If this were a scene from a soap opera, everything would have happened in slow motion. But in reality, Tippapha found it all far from romantic. As she turned to catch P' Din, who looked like he was about to fall, she lost her balance and pulled her onto the bed with her.

Machine Translated by Google

Even though P' Din wasn't completely sober, her instinct was quicker to hold on with her arms, preventing her from falling on top of her completely.

"Rose..."

If the scene wasn't perfect like in a soap opera, what would be the next act with P' Din drunk? The soft way she said his name, the intensity in her gaze. If Din tried something because of alcohol, what should he do? Resist or give in?

"Can you get off me, P' Din? My arms are tired."

"..."

As soon as she left, P'Din collapsed onto the bed in relief and closed her eyes, falling asleep immediately. She seemed oblivious to how much the latest situation had shaken her.

In real life, nothing else happened!

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 9

True feelings versus status

false.

"You came early, Kaew."

"We have to visit a lot of clients today, so I came to pick you up early so I could get there on time."

"Thank you for bringing me home last night."

"You're welcome. I stopped by this morning to get you some black coffee. It helps with your hangover."

"Why don't you keep the coffee for yourself, Khun Kaew? Earlier, I prepared some black coffee for P' Din.
Too much caffeine is not good."

Tippapha had intentionally interrupted the conversation between the two, or perhaps she could not resist the pressure from Moddaeng, who was teaching her to be P'Din's number one, and so she decided to show herself as his wife. She did not want Khun Kaew to be charmed or for anyone else to seduce P'Din in any way.

"Rose?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Tonight, will P' Din be back late again? I can wait for you then."

"I'm not sure when I'll finish work. If you're sleepy, you can go to bed earlier."

"How can I sleep sooner? As a wife, I need to wait until P' Din comes home. Otherwise, I will be worried and won't be able to sleep."

Kasama, not understanding the reason, looked at Tippapha, who was standing next to her, completely speechless in the presence of the assistant. She still didn't know why Tippapha was using her sweet voice and leaning on her arm, just like she did in front of her stepfather Wasupon.

"I'll be back as soon as I'm done with work, so Rose doesn't have to worry."

"P' Din is the best! You deserve a reward."

"Reward? What...!"

"Did you like it? If you want more, P' Din, come home quickly and I'll give you more."

"..."

Kasama wasn't sure if he was happy, because what he felt most like was surprise, and his reaction was clear. Being pulled closer by Tippapha and given a quick kiss on the cheek, followed by a sweet smile that she shared with both her and Kaew, before walking calmly back into the house.

"Khun Din, shall we go?"

"Kaew, drive for me, please."

"Hey, aren't you going to drive?"

Machine Translated by Google

"No. Today I'd rather have Kaew drive all day."

For safety's sake, it was better for someone in their right mind to drive, even if they thought their hangover had passed.
But Tippapha's effect on her mind and heart still left her shaken and would not pass easily.

"Now yes, Mrs. Rose. It is not in vain that you are my student, Moddaeng."

"Are you sure, Moddaeng, that this method works? Or maybe people think badly of me, that I'm easy?"

"Who would think that of you, Mrs. Rose?"

"To P' Din, or even you, Khun Kaew."

Tippapha expressed her confusion and concern after she followed Moddaeng's advice to invest heavily in P' Din. Moddaeng had vouched for her technique with her successful track record at Chomchan Farm. She must remember that Moddaeng had met many admirers and had gotten the most handsome one of them all. Therefore, Moddaeng wanted to convey to Tippapha how to be number one.

"Why would P' Din think you're easy, Ms. Rose?
You are her wife.
That's normal, she even seemed to like everything."

"But actually, P' Din and I are not..."

"What are you and P' Din not?"

Machine Translated by Google

"We're not... people who show off. P' Din always behaves and respects me, and I should do the same with her."

The owner of the beautiful face made up an excuse to get out of the situation, almost confessing the truth to Moddaeng. They are not really married, she is not even his real wife, a real marriage. But she remembered in time, after all, P'Din asked her to keep it a secret even from those close to her.

"If P' Din is like this and so are you, your relationship will not evolve."

"P' Din is reserved, Moddaeng, you see. And me, what can I do?"

"If she doesn't make the first move, you should, Mrs. Rose.
It's not that difficult."

"Moddaeng! I won't continue this conversation. I thought you would have better advice."

"I'm serious, Mrs. Rose. As a couple, you need to adjust not only in habits, but even in intimacy."

"..."

The lady of the Saenrak farm was beside herself upon hearing Moddaeng speak so bluntly. She got up and left, not wanting to be encouraged into any more follies. The mention of intimacy reminded her of last night, and even though there had been no novelistic incident, shame overwhelmed her.

"Have you ever considered replacing Kaew as your assistant?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Why are you asking this, Kaew? We've worked together for years, and I've never thought about leaving her."

"I asked because after the wedding I figured P'Din might reconsider his decisions."

"Speak to me directly, Kaew."

"Forgive me for mentioning Mrs. Rose, but she seems dissatisfied when you two travel together."

Kasama stopped, hearing her assistant talking about Tippapha. After completing the tasks, she left for Saenrak Farm. But the topic Kaew brought up was something she couldn't ignore.

"Kaew, are you saying that Rose doesn't like you working with me?"

"More or less, P' Din. At first I wasn't sure, but

after last night when he took us home, and this

morning, I realized there was something to it." "Why did Rose

would feel that way? She knows we've been together for years."

"She's jealous, P' Din."

"Is Rose jealous of me?"

"Yes, and being his wife, it's common to feel that way when you're around another woman."

"..."

Rose jealous as if it were love...

Maybe Kaew misunderstood? Because, really, they are not a real couple. But Kaew does not speak without basis or certainty.

Machine Translated by Google

"I understand how Mrs. Rose feels. If it were me, I would be jealous too."

"No, I'm sure you must be wrong."

"It may not seem like it now, but I don't want P' Din and Mrs. Rose to have any problems. What if, hypothetically, she asked you to choose between her and me? I know who you would choose, and that's why I thought I'd change roles."

"None of that will happen, I'm confident. Rose is great and understanding. I'm clear about how much I value you as an assistant and friend and her as a wife, so that won't be an issue."

Kasama assured Kaew that everything would be fine, despite the unresolved issue of Tippapha's jealousy. If true, they would talk honestly, as promised, while respecting secrets at the same time.

"So, even if you're married, you can continue working by my side."

"Are you going to Chiang Mai tomorrow, P' Din?"

"Yes, I'm going to meet Miss Kanda, an important client. She is opening a new hotel, and I want to congratulate her."

"Are you coming back the same day like last time?"

"This time I'm going to spend the night at the hotel. It would be rude to refuse, but I'll be back the next morning."

"Are you going to sleep a whole night in Chiang Mai?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, I'll be with Kaew."

Kasama responded naturally and observed Tippapha's reaction, testing the assumption he had not yet fully accepted. One could not share the truth with Kaew, so the issue needed to be explored.

"P' Din, you should let Kaew drive and come back the same day. What about me, will I be alone on the farm? What if Mahattanakorn comes to cause trouble?"

"Don't worry, I asked Lom to ensure your safety."

"But I..."

Tippapha was restless, with no reason to change P'Din's mind, and she struggled not to show her nervousness when she heard him say he would be spending the night out with Kaew. Being in Saenrak always put her on edge; how could she let them go out together at night?

"Rose, what's wrong?"

"I don't care! I'm going to Chiang Mai!"

"What?"

"It seems strange that you would go with your assistant after you got married. You should go with your wife."

"I didn't know I wanted to go. I didn't think I would like the trip, so I didn't invite you."

"I want to go. I really want to go."

"Then let's go together, P' Din. I'm always by your side."

Machine Translated by Google

"You're terrible at disguising yourself, P' Din. Our disguise will fail because of you, not me. From now on I'll be glued to you, I won't let you out of my sight."

Kasama hid a smile, the unexpected irony of the situation now obvious.
Even without fully understanding Tippapha's motives, Kasama felt important.

"Rose, you barely said that and you're already running away?"

"I need to go to the bathroom. Will you follow me?"

"Of course."

And P' Din shouldn't smile like that. I asked her to smile more, not to make fun of me."

"Now, you said you would follow me everywhere?"

"I just need the bathroom!"

P' Din watched as Tippapha, still a little upset, walked into the bathroom, smiling and laughing softly with tenderness. Yes, the affection was very apparent.

"Foolish love."

"Don't forget the souvenir for Moddaeng, Mrs.
Rose."

"Yes, I know. If I forget to buy it, Moddaeng will keep reminding me."

"See? When you listened to Moddaeng, you were able to go on a second honeymoon to Chiang Mai with P' Din."

Machine Translated by Google

"It's nothing like that. I'm just accompanying P' Din for work."

"Still, you'll be together, just the two of you. Ms. Rose, make sure to spoil her plenty, okay? Strengthen your relationship even more than in Prachuap, so that no one can intrude."

"You cheeky girl!"

Moddaeng's words seemed harmless, but the mischievous look and restless gestures made her scold her, raising her hand to give a reminder of respect.

If P' Din heard, he would certainly think that she had no control over the employees. "Rose, shall we go?"

"P' Din! Since when have you been here?"

"I just arrived."

"Khun Din, take good care of Ms. Rose during the trip, okay? Have a great time."

"I leave Moddaeng to take care of the house with Aunty Chan."

"Of course, Khun Din, don't worry. Just worry about Mrs. Rose."

"Let's get in the car, Rose. You look like you're tan from waiting so long."

"..."

My face isn't red from the sun, I swear. It's Moddaeng's boldness that makes me uncomfortable, but luckily P' Din isn't the questioning type, so I don't need to explain myself further.

When I come back... just you wait, Moddaeng!

Machine Translated by Google

"Hello, Miss Kanda."

"Khun Din, welcome! Long time no see."

"How are you, Miss Kanda?"

"I'm fine, what about you? Who did you come with today? Aren't you with Khun Kaew?"

"No, Miss Kanda. This is Rose, my..."

Kasama was about to introduce his wife, Tippapha, who had come to congratulate the opening of Miss Kanda’s new hotel branch in Chiang Mai in place of Kaew, whom she had left to take care of Saenrak Farm. Tippapha had wanted to come, saying clearly that she wanted to be by his side, and Kasama did not want to spoil the trip or disappoint her beloved.

"Mom, why didn't you tell me Khun Din was here?
Hello, Khun Din!"

"Hello, N' Kant."

"I haven't seen much of Khun Din lately. I missed her!"

"N' Kant has just returned from England, bringing a fresh diploma from there."

"Congratulations, N' Kant! And congratulations too, Miss Kanda, on the new hotel."

"Khun Din changed his secretary? This isn't Khun Kaew..."

"Hello."

Machine Translated by Google

In fact, it would not have been necessary to bow so long, but Tippapha wanted to show off the large diamond ring on her left ring finger. Afraid that N'Kant would not notice, she made a point of adjusting her hair with her left hand.

"Miss Kanda, N' Kant, this is Rose, my wife."

"Is this woman your wife, Khun Din?"

"Yes, wife and woman mean the same thing. Nice to meet you, N' Kant."

"..."

Even without Khun Kaew, there is still N' Kant...

What does P' Din have to do with women whose names start with the letter K?

"Is everything okay in the room?"

"Why did Miss Kanda move to a suite?"

"Miss Kanda just found out about the wedding and arranged a suite for the newlyweds. I didn't have the heart to refuse."

"You've always been a person who doesn't like to bother, haven't you, P' Din? Not just with Miss Kanda, but you never turn anyone down."

"What do you mean, Rose?"

"Nothing, I was just commenting."

Machine Translated by Google

I can’t let P’Din know that my jealousy is out of control. I thought that without Kaew, everything would be fine, but I didn’t expect that the hotel owner’s daughter, N’Kant, would make my heart flutter. It doesn’t make sense to feel this way, but it happens a lot lately. If Moddaeng were here, it would be nice to be able to ask what’s going on with me.

"I've known N' Kant since her school days, so I see her as a sister.

Kaew is like a great friend."

"And why are you telling me this? I didn't ask, P'
Din."

"These are things a wife should know."

Kasama spoke in a soft and warm voice, calming anyone who might have been disturbed by misunderstandings. Even though it was a marriage of convenience, she assured him of fidelity, so don't make any mistakes.

"I thought Rose was jealous of Kaew, but it seems she's jealous of N' Kant too."

"You got it wrong, P' Din. I'm not jealous of any woman."

"And even?"

"Yes, it's my role as a wife to pretend to be jealous in front of the women who approach P' Din. Deep down, I don't care, it's just acting."

"Is it just an act?"

"We're married for fun, how can I be really jealous? It would be ridiculous! P' Din would think I was a fool if I was too immersed in the role like that. I'm just good

Machine Translated by Google

actress, aren't you? I was convincing enough to fool even P' Din."

"..."

Sorry, I have to dodge that accusation. I can't let P' Din see my genuine jealousy, deep down.

Every day that passes, P' Din shakes my emotions more and more...

Normally, if people know that someone already has a partner or wife officially, most decent people would not think of getting involved or interfering with someone who is married. But now I am sure that Khun Kant is an exception. Even with the news of P'Din's marriage, the hotel owner's daughter seemed shocked and unresponsive, but it was only for a moment.

Soon she regained her breath to invest even more intensely in P' Din.

"Another glass of wine, please."

Now because her heart was hot, she needed a cold drink to cool it down or maybe even warm it up even more. Even though it was her first time attending an event with P' Din, she was taken by Khun Kanda to meet people from the business community. She had to leave his side for a moment, asking him to wait in the refreshment area. But when Din finished and was returning to her, Khun Kant appeared and took her,

Machine Translated by Google

right in front of her. "Honeymoon, nothing... Moddaeng! This is a complicated trip."

In addition to not bringing the relationship closer, even though the trip did not include Khun Kaew, Tippapha felt that the current situation was a marital disaster. Their superficial relationship as a couple was about to face a storm that threatened to sink everything.

"Pretty girl."

"Yes?"

"Why are you here alone, away, drinking?"

"Are you talking to me?"

The owner of the beautiful face looked around and realized that she was alone in that corner, waiting, with her third glass of wine, since, every time she tried to leave, someone would hold P' Din back for another conversation. It didn't seem like Kasama left Saenrak Farm much for these events.

"Yes, I am. You're the prettiest one here."

"But I don't think we've met."

"I'm about to introduce myself. I'm Sira, owner of the largest lumber company in Chiang Mai. How about you?"

"I'll take my leave. I don't see the need for us to meet."

"Wait, let me help. You look like you're already a little dizzy..."

"Let me take care of my wife, I don't need help from strangers."

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha looked at the one who always appeared at the right time, while P'
Din pushed away the hand of the man who tried to touch her, pulling her by the waist in a possessive manner. Din had never been one to touch her at will or take advantage, but now, clearly, she had an urgent reason.

"Sorry to keep you waiting, Rose."

Fortunately, the situation did not worsen thanks to Kasama's arrival, forcing the intruder to retreat to avoid a scandal. Even so, Kasama blamed herself for neglecting her wife, even for a moment, in the middle of an appointment. She always kept an eye on Tippapha and, as soon as she noticed someone trying to get close to her, she rushed to intervene.

"It's okay, P' Din."

"I'm really sorry."

"Don't worry, I know how to defend myself."

Kasama smiled again, reassured by Tippapha’s charming demeanor as she put everything in order. Together, they rode the elevator up to their hotel room. Her wife, now confident, raised her fists playfully in a fighting gesture.

"I promise I won't take my eyes off you again, Rose."

"What do you mean? Are you going to follow me into the bathroom? You can't!"

"It's not that, I didn't mean it like that."

"You're provoking me, P' Din. Just look."

"Okay, you win, Rose."

Machine Translated by Google

"Yeah, P' Din can never beat me."

Yeah, P' Din can't beat Rose...

This was a truth that Tippapha said without any contradiction, while trying to guide his lovely wife, now visibly drunk and talking more than usual, charmingly to the point of making her smile and laugh.

"Come on, walk carefully. We're already in the room, a little more and you'll be in bed."

"So far away. I'm tired."

"Do you want me to carry you?"

"No! No, I'm not a child."

Even though she was a little dizzy, she listened and understood. Don't call Rose a child, she's an adult, she's married, she's P'Din's number one wife, and she doesn't let anyone interfere. She must cement this relationship, she will not let Moddaeng's speech be in vain.

"Rose! Wait, what are you doing?"

"Be quiet, P' Din, don't make any noise."

"..."

Kasama stopped, as commanded by her wife, without moving an inch, as Tippapha leaned over to fall onto the bed with her, settling herself on her shoulder with an exhausted sigh and being overcome by alcohol and sleep, falling asleep right there.

Without any improper situation between them, Kasama did not regret the lost opportunity for a closer encounter, but rather the serenity in knowing that none of this occurred while Tippapha was completely unconscious.

Machine Translated by Google

Regardless of how true a drunk person’s words were, perhaps it was just another scene, like everything else in their fake wedding. But Kasama hoped one thing was clear: his true feelings at that moment were outlined by his tender touch on the sleeping Tippapha, overflowing with care and sincere affection.

"I'm really jealous of you, Rose."

To me, none of this was ever an act...

Chapter 10

Machine Translated by Google

The smoke and confusion cleared.

The new day began with a heaviness, as if the images in her head were spinning like a wheel. Or perhaps the world was spinning so much that it made her wake up without being fully alert. Tippapha closed her eyes once more to adjust her focus before leaning against the headboard of the bed. She looked around the room, which seemed strange.

After sitting there for a while, trying to gather her thoughts, she began to remember what had happened the night before. She was now staying at a new hotel owned by Mr. Kanta in Chiang Mai province because she had been asked to accompany his wife, Din, to a work event, filling in for his assistant, Ms. Kaew.
Furthermore, the night before, she had been upset about something related to Mr. Kan, and coupled with the fact that Din had kept her waiting for a long time, she had ended up drinking several glasses of wine in her irritation. After that, she could barely remember anything, as if her mind had gone blank.

The end of someone who thought he had a high resistance to alcohol ended in a regrettable way, as one could imagine!

"Rose, are you awake?"

"Din..."

Tippapha’s eyes widened in surprise. The person she was just thinking about with a bit of hurt and resentment had unexpectedly entered the room. Din was in new clothes, ready for the trip back to Chiang Rai that was scheduled for that morning.

Machine Translated by Google

Meanwhile, she was still in her dress from the party the night before, in a completely disheveled state.

"Do you have a headache?"

"A little... But... was I really drunk last night?"

"Yes, you were very drunk."

"I can't remember anything. Were you the one who brought me back to the room?"

"I brought you here to rest. You've been sleeping until now."

Din smiled warmly as he noticed Tippapha discreetly looking under the blanket his wife had placed over her the night before. Din had also helped her settle down so she could sleep comfortably.

Tippapha looked relieved to find that everything was all right with her. She sighed loudly without realizing it, and then looked up to meet Din's gaze, who was watching her with a smile.

"Last night, I didn't take advantage of you or overstep my boundaries while you were unconscious.
You can rest assured."

"I never thought you were that kind of person, Din.
If it were, I would never have trusted you to marry me."

She and Moddaeng were in agreement: Din was incredibly respectful and always treated her with dignity. The possibility of Din taking advantage of her while she was unconscious was non-existent.

Machine Translated by Google

Wait... Why did that word "trust" sound so familiar? It was as if she had used that expression not too long ago, but no matter how much she thought about it, she couldn't remember exactly when.

"Now that you're awake, go take a shower. I'll order food to the room."

"Have you eaten yet?"

"No. I'll wait to eat with you."

"Is it already past 11 o'clock? Did I wake up that late?

Why didn't you wake me up, Din? Our plan was

return to Chiang Rai in the morning." In a low voice,

Tippapha apologized when he noticed the time on his phone.

"I saw that you were sleeping so deeply that I didn't want to wake you up.

We can go back to the farm in the afternoon."

"You always give in to my whims, don't you, Din?"

"If I don't give in to your whims, whose will I give in to?"

"Nobody's! Not Mrs. Kaew's, not Mrs. Kan's. No way!"

"Are you playing the role of a jealous wife now, Rose? You play it so well I almost believe it. I'm glad you warned me before so I could tell what was acting."

Tippapha froze, speechless, as he heard Din return his own words so calmly, with a slight smile on his face. It was as if the lame excuse

Machine Translated by Google

what she had said the day before had been exactly what Din understood it to be – something said just to get out of the situation.

"Actually, I'm really jealous..."

But even if she said that now, no one was there to hear it. Din had already left the room, leaving her with some privacy.

"Can't Din tell I'm not pretending?"

"Mr. Thip, Rose came to visit you!"

The young woman's pretty face lit up with a cheerful and energetic smile, as she always did when she visited her father. He was still in stable condition, but not showing any major improvements. Her father remained in the ICU, even after almost a month since the accident. However, Rose remained hopeful and never thought about giving up. She believed that by visiting him almost every day, he would not be able to resist the longing and would soon come back to her.

"I just got back from Chiang Mai with Din today, so I came to visit you a little later. Don't be mad at me, okay, Dad?"

Tippapha held the rough hand of her father, who looked thinner than before, a result of standing still, not moving or running in the mornings as he usually did. Her father, Mr. Thipakorn, was known for his robust health and for keeping active. He worked the farm with speed and efficiency, and was admired and respected by the workers. This was in contrast to Rose, who, although she had tried to help out on the farm for a while, had not yet fully adapted to the work.

Machine Translated by Google

But then again, she felt lucky to have Din by her side. Din cared for her with the same affection and dedication as her father. As an older sister, Din was mature, trustworthy, and also a friend Rose could talk to about anything. In addition, Din helped her with her work challenges and always respected her as a wife.

"Father, you were right to trust Din. She takes such good care of me. I am a very happy woman now. But I would be even happier if you would come back and take care of me too. Come back soon to help me learn how to work on the farm, so I can be as good as you!"

Today, Din was talking to the doctor and had not yet gone to visit Mr. Thip with Rose, which gave her a moment to talk to him alone. She took the opportunity to praise Din, telling him how amazing Din was and how well he treated her, so that her father would feel proud for having trusted the right person. Then, Rose took her father's hand and pressed it to her face, absorbing the warmth she had missed so much. With her eyes closed, she wished she could enjoy this moment of peace more before heading back.

It was then that he felt a slight movement in the fingers he was holding. His father's hand responded with a small movement. Even though it soon stopped, Tippapha was sure that it had really happened.

"Nurse! Please call the doctor! My father just moved his hand. He is conscious!"

It was like a miracle she had been waiting for, and it had finally happened...

Machine Translated by Google

Before she was faced with the harsh reality, it seemed like the hope she had patiently waited for and built up little by little had collapsed like a house of cards.

The truth was... miracles don't exist!

"Stop meddling, Moddaeng! And knock on the door next time! I want to be alone!"

Tippapha shouted at Moddaeng, asking her to stop bothering her. Right now, Tippapha was in no mood to talk or meet anyone. Ever since she had felt like her dreams had been shattered when she heard from the doctor who had been treating her father that the movement she believed she had seen in his hand was just a muscle spasm, a side effect of the medication. It was not nearly the good news or the sign of hope she had hoped for.

The doctor repeated the same advice he always had: she should accept the possibility that her father would remain in a coma after the accident. But who could accept such a cruel truth? At least for Tippapha, who pretended to be strong and cheerful to hide it, it was disheartening and devastating. It seemed that the world was too cruel to her, to the point that she could hardly bear anything anymore.

Maybe that's why she remained silent the entire way back from the hospital, not saying a word to Din.
Fortunately, Din respected her space, and didn't insist or question why she preferred to stay in her old room instead of going back to the master bedroom. Tippapha just wanted to be alone in her weakness, without Din seeing this side of her, marked by incessant tears.

Din's silence and lack of questions were somehow a comfort and support. When Tippapha

Machine Translated by Google

was ready to face her father's situation again, she knew she could share with Din all the pain she was feeling.

"But you haven't eaten anything yet, Mrs. Rose. At least if you don't want to eat dinner, have a glass of warm milk before you go to bed. I'm worried about you," Moddaeng said.

"..."

Silence was Tippapha's only response, which caused Moddaeng to sigh in concern. She had heard from Din that something related to Tippapha's father had happened at the hospital, but it wasn't good news. This left Tippapha devastated, preferring to be alone. So Moddaeng gave up on insisting and left, finding Din watching from afar.

"Mrs. Din."

"Moddaeng, has Rose eaten anything yet?"

"Not yet, Mrs. Din. She hasn't even touched her dinner. I even brought her some warm milk, but Rose sent me away and didn't open the door."

"I'm worried. She hasn't eaten anything since the afternoon."

Din expressed his concern for his wife, who had been through a difficult time. She understood Rose's pain of disappointment, as she had also been hoping for good news about her father. However, the doctor had confirmed that the movement was not a sign of recovery.

"If you're so worried, why don't you try talking to Rose, Madam Din? Maybe she'll listen to you and agree to eat something," Moddaeng suggested.

Machine Translated by Google

"If you couldn't do it, how could I?"

"She's your wife, Madam Din. I'm just a maid. Trust me, she'll listen to you."

"But she said she wants to be alone."

Din hesitated, torn between respecting Rose's space and wanting to comfort her. She knew that even though she wanted to be by Rose's side, she might end up making her even more uncomfortable if she insisted.

"We women don't always say what we really feel, Madam Din. Deep down, I think Rose needs you very much right now," Moddaeng said.

"Do you think Rose needs me?"

"Yes. Go take care of her, Mrs. Din. At least make her drink this milk."

"Moddaeng, I'll try."

“I told you to go away, Moddaeng! Stop knocking on the door...”

“It’s me, Rose.”

“P'Din?”

Tippapha was momentarily speechless, stopping what he was going to say. When he opened the half-open door, he found Din's face, not Moddaeng's, who had already disturbed his space several times that day,

Machine Translated by Google

intensifying her irritation. Because it was someone unexpected and someone she didn't want to see at the moment, Tippapha quickly turned her back and walked away, trying to hide the tears and fragility that she preferred to face alone.

If she were strong again tomorrow, she would be the same smiling person she always was...

“I brought you hot milk. Moddaeng said you didn’t eat anything.”

“I'm not hungry.”

“At least have some, please. Going without food for too long can cause stomach pain.”

“Take it back, Din. I can’t eat anything.”

“Can I ask you something, Rose? I know you’re worried about your father, but you promised you’d take care of yourself too. Have some milk, just a little, to calm my nerves, please.”

“I already said no, and no means no! Why do you have to

insist so much?” ***Crash!***

The sound of the glass falling and breaking on the floor echoed unexpectedly. Without noticing Din approaching from behind, Tippapha's arm ended up hitting the glass, which fell and shattered, spilling milk across the floor.

Moddaeng, who had been watching the situation through a crack in the door, quickly entered the room, alarmed.

Tippapha looked at the chaos around her, as surprised as the others. Din remained silent, his expression impossible to read. Moddaeng, on the other hand, was visibly pale. Before the situation could get any worse,

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha decided to take action. She didn’t want to fight with Din, especially when she already felt so emotionally drained.

“Get out, all of you! I want to be alone!”

“If my concern seems invasive or annoying, I won’t bother you any further.”

“...”

"Sorry."

Kasama, as always, took full responsibility.
She remained calm, without fighting or blaming anyone, choosing to leave without further discussion.

Din didn't say a single word blaming Rose.

But why did Rose feel so guilty now?

“Moddaeng! You don’t have to avoid looking at me anymore.”

“Does Mrs. Rose not want to be alone anymore?”

The pretty-faced young woman stared at Moddaeng, who questioned her with a hesitant expression, as if he didn't know whether he could approach her or not. They had met in the hallway that morning, after Rose had spent some time alone to compose herself. Although
had managed to overcome her disappointment regarding her father's health, another problem arose in her mind, bringing even more uneasiness. She spent the entire night unable to sleep, consumed by guilt.

Machine Translated by Google

“Sorry for taking my bad mood out on you yesterday.”

“It’s okay, ma’am. I understand that Ms. Rose is going through difficult times. Ms. Din has already explained everything to me and asked me not to take what happened to heart.”

“And speaking of which, where’s P’Din? I woke up and didn’t see her.”

“Mrs. Chan said she slept in the office last night.”

“Why did she sleep at the office? Why didn’t she sleep at home?”

It seemed like a question that Moddaeng didn’t need to answer. Instead, she looked at Rose with an expression that clearly said that she knew very well why. After all, she was the one who caused the situation last night and she didn’t even have the chance to apologize. On the contrary, she let Din apologize, even though she was just worried and hadn’t done anything wrong.

“Then, after breakfast, let’s go to the office together. I need to apologize to P’Din for what happened yesterday.”

“That’s right! Mrs. Rose is really maturing.”

“Hey! Are you treating me like a joke now?”

“No way! Ms. Rose is my number one student.”

“This story isn’t over yet, huh?”

“Ms. Rose needs to apologize to Ms. Din in a sweet way, with

Machine Translated by Google

lots of affection. I'm sure she won't be mad.”

Even without Moddaeng’s encouragement, Rose already knew she had to do the right thing. But that didn’t include being cute or affectionate to earn her forgiveness. She would leave that to Din’s real wife in the future. She just wanted to apologize for what she did wrong, so as not to prolong the misunderstanding between them.

"Ah? Ms. Rose, didn't you say you would apologize to Ms. Din?
We're almost at the office."
Why did you come back suddenly?"

"Leave the apologies for later."

"It can't be like this! Staying angry for a long time isn't good for a couple's life, you know?"

"And how do you want me to interfere? Didn't you see that the lady
Is Din talking to Mrs. Kaew? She leaves me

thinking, worried all night, but she doesn't seem to care. Everything is

fine with her, she even seems happy, smiling

and talking to Mrs. Kaew, all excited like that."

"Mrs. Rose, are you jealous of Mrs. Din?

new, isn't it?" Yes! She was jealous...

Jealous, even though she was just a fake wife. Even though she knew she was wrong and should be the first to apologize, she couldn't help but feel irritated when she saw the closeness between Madam Din and her assistant.

Machine Translated by Google

Even though she had never been in love, never been married, and Madam Din was the first woman to make her feel something so strange and new, her intuition told her that Madam Kaew's gaze towards Madam Din was not that of a simple coworker or close friend. You could even say that she was being prejudiced or extremely jealous, and she would admit it.

"Ah, now there's no way to apologize to Mrs. Din, right? She's already left in the car with Mrs. Kaew."

"It's Mrs. Din who should come and ask me

"Apologies!" "Oh, there goes Mrs. Rose acting

like a child again."

Love really does have the power to transform people like this...

"You seem very excited, Wasu. So, about tonight's delivery, is everything planned yet?"

"Don't worry about it, Father. I've already made all the preparations. I'm sure our men will pass through Chomchan Ranch without any problems, without anyone to interfere, because tonight there will be something quite entertaining to distract them all."

"This work cannot fail under any circumstances. If we fail, we will not only lose money, but also our reputation and connections."

Machine Translated by Google

"You can prepare to receive the profits, father. Tonight I will organize a grand celebration myself."

Wasu chuckled with satisfaction, enjoying the information his spy had received from Saenrak Ranch. He knew everything about the couple: where they were going, what they were planning. He even knew that the night before, Kasama had had to sleep in the office after fighting with his wife.

For someone like him, who was always in control, it was like watching the pieces on a chessboard move desperately to reach the goal.

He would just wait patiently until they let their guard down and thought everything was going according to plan. When they were one step closer to victory, he would knock over the board, scattering the pieces and sending them to hell. That would be much more fun than going after them directly like last time, when he was still afraid they might fight back.

"Tonight, half an hour before delivery, order our men to begin!"

"Mrs. Rose..."

"No, Moddaeng. It was Madam Din who chose not to return home. So I couldn't apologize."

"But there are still other ways! You can send a message or call to apologize. That way, Madam Din would come home."

Machine Translated by Google

"She was the one who decided to sleep in the office. No one forced her. How could I change her decision?"

This time, not even Moddaeng's insistence could convince her. Even though she knew she was wrong and wanted to apologize, she was still hurt.
Especially since, the day before, while they were in Chiang Mai, Madam Din had promised that she would not do anything to make her worry, assuring her that she would not make her feel jealous because of Madam Kaew or any other woman.

But now, she had spent the day out with Mrs. Kaew, all smiles, and when she came back, she preferred to sleep in the office rather than go home.

If we were to weigh up the situations, whose fault would be greater?
Rose's, for being stubborn and hurting her unintentionally?
Or to Din, for being insensitive and causing him sadness?

"You two complicate such simple things! Or do you need to wait until it's too late?"

"It's never too late. I'll apologize tomorrow."

In the end, she chose to avoid the conversation, postponing her apology once again. After deciding to talk to her in the morning, she changed it to the afternoon. But since Mrs. Din didn't come home, she ended up postponing it until the next day.

"What happened to the light?"

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama muttered softly as she realized that the lights in the office had gone out. Only the screen of her phone, which she was using as a flashlight, illuminated the room. That night was the second time she had decided to stay in the office to finish her tasks, avoiding going home.

She didn't want to cause trouble or upset her wife, Tippapha, who seemed to want some time alone.
Kasama knew that, even though she was worried, it was best to give her space and keep her distance until her wife felt better.

"Normally, the power reserve system works..."

Rising from her chair, Kasama intended to check the control room, but before she could leave, she smelled smoke coming from under the door. Opening it, she was met with intense flames consuming the hallway. The shock made her cough as she quickly closed the door.

With the flames blocking the main exit, she had no how to escape.

"Uncle Kla! Come put out the fire! The office is on fire. Cough, cough... I'm stuck in the an..."

Kasama's voice disappeared before he could finish calling for help to the worker's boss. The smoke was rapidly intensifying, making it difficult to breathe and increasing the risk of suffocation.

She looked around, trying to find a way out of the crisis. However, the only thing that seemed clear at that moment was how far away she was from a solution.

Machine Translated by Google

"P'Din!"

Tippapha woke up with a start in the middle of the night, her face covered in sweat. She had had a terrible nightmare, in which she saw her wife in mortal danger. The dream seemed so real that it left her with a racing heart and unable to go back to sleep. In the dream, P'Din was being attacked and had a gun pointed at her by Mr. Wasu, threatening her life.

"Mrs. Rose, wake up! Something serious has happened, Mrs. Rose!"

"Moddaeng, what happened?"

"Right now, the office is on fire. The workers said that Madam Din is trapped in the office... Madam Rose, wait! Wait for me!"

Even though Moddaeng called out loudly to her, Tippapha knew her legs couldn't wait. They were already carrying her at a rapid pace, as if they had a life of their own, as she ran toward the Saenrak Farm office. In the distance, she could see the intense flames consuming the building, difficult to contain.

"Rose apologizes."

She wanted to apologize for everything bad she had caused her wife. Ever since P'Din found her, ever since she had returned to her life after fourteen years, it seemed like the peace of everyone at Saenrak Farm and in Kasama's life had been stolen by her weakness and selfishness.

"Please, P'Din, you must survive to hear my apology."

"Mrs. Rose, what are you doing here?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Uncle Kla, P'Din is still inside, isn't he? I'm going in to save her!"

"First get Mrs. Rose out of here! Don't come any closer, it's dangerous!"

"But I need to save P'Din! Let me go! P'Din!"

Tippapha screamed for her wife as loud as she could over the chaos, as the workers tried to stop her from entering the burning building. But if everyone was too scared to rescue P'Din, she would do it herself. She wouldn't let anything happen to her wife without at least trying to protect her.

She wasn't ready to lose another important person in her life.

"Mrs. Rose!"

"P'Din!"

"..."

Kasama looked at Tippapha, who ran towards her and hugged her tightly, completely frightened. When she heard her wife calling her, Kasama had gotten up from where she was resting, having escaped the fire. In order to survive, she had decided to break a window and escape through it. Fortunately, she only suffered mild smoke inhalation and avoided anything more serious.

"I apologize. It's all my fault. Because of me, P'Din ended up in danger. I... If something had happened to you, I would never forgive myself!"

"It's okay. I'm safe now. Don't cry, Rose."

Machine Translated by Google

"I don't want to be weak, but the tears won't stop falling. Just the thought of losing P'Din... I couldn't bear it."

"I'm strong. I won't let you go that easily, Rose."

Kasama looked at Tippapha, who quickly covered her mouth to stop her from talking. Tippapha then took a step back, but her eyes were filled with tears, reflecting all the vulnerability caused by that unexpected event.

"P'Din, you don't need to say anything. Just listen to me. I will say it now. I won't wait any longer, because I'm afraid it will be too late."

Kasama nodded silently, listening attentively. But instead of interrupting with words, she acted gently, gently wiping Tippapha's tears, showing that she cared.

"Do you know how much I care about you P'Din?"

"Yes I know."

"And I'm very jealous of you P'Din, you know?"

"You already told me that the other day, and you also told me the reason for this jealousy."

"No, it was a lie. That day, I lied. Actually, it wasn't like that. It wasn't like that at all."

"Like this?"

"I wasn't just putting on an act. I'm actually jealous, I really am."

Because she was afraid that Din wouldn't believe her, that he would think she was just putting on a show. But today, she was finally telling the truth, expressing her true feelings.

Machine Translated by Google

that he truly felt from his heart. It was like people who always wait until it's too late, as Moddaeng said. Only then do they feel comfortable saying what they really think.

But if P'Din hadn't been lucky enough to be safe now, at thirty-two, and hadn't been there to listen to her, she would never have had the chance to express her feelings, because the person she wanted to talk to would probably never listen. So she wasn't going to keep it to herself anymore. Even if P'Din saw her as an easy woman, she wouldn't make things any harder between them.

"Yes, it's true. I really am jealous."

"Are you saying you're jealous of me?"

"Yes, I just realized now that I'm a very jealous person."

"..."

"I don't want you to get close to any other woman. I don't want you to look at anyone, I don't want you to be interested in anyone else but me."

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 11

Direct, straightforward feelings.

"Sorry, Moddaeng couldn't tell Rose in time that P'Din was safe. Rose didn't wait until she heard everything, she ran off, and Moddaeng couldn't catch up with her."

"I'm glad I managed to stay calm. If I had been in shock, Moddaeng would have had to take responsibility."

"But now, Rose has already reconciled with P'Din, hasn't she? P'Din must be happy to see how much you care."

"Yes, I care about P'Din."

It was as if that life-or-death moment when P'Din was in danger had happened. Even though the firefighters the workers called to put out the fire on the farm had managed to control the flames, the office building still suffered a lot of damage and would need repairs for quite some time. But the damaged goods were material things, easy to replace. It wasn't like the farm that had only one person, and

Machine Translated by Google

That event made Tippapha realize how important P'Din was to her.

Therefore, from now on, she would no longer try to appear distant or inflexible with P'Din. She would no longer hide her feelings. Whatever she thought, she would say it directly, without beating around the bush, because she did not want to wait until it was too late, and she did not want to waste any more time in life with misunderstandings and lack of understanding.

She said this from her heart to Moddaeng, and even the person closest to her felt happy and proud of her progress. It was as if the smoke that had cleared had helped her clearly see the feelings that were hidden within her. Although she still didn't know how to describe the feelings that had arisen, at this moment, she didn't want to find a name for them. She just wanted to be happy and wish P'Din would be happy too.

"Rose, why don't you go rest?"

"I'm waiting for P'Din. What did the police say?"

"Right now they have not yet concluded whether the fire was caused by a short circuit or whether someone set the fire intentionally.
They need to collect evidence from the scene before reaching a conclusion on the case."

"Then P'Din needs to rest too. We can go to the police station tomorrow morning. I'll go with you."

Tippapha said this with a worried tone after P'Din had walked away from the police officers who were investigating the scene. P'Din asked Moddaeng to take her back to the house to wait while he would come later.
When she returned at three in the morning, she found Tippapha still waiting in the living room. She knew that she was not

Machine Translated by Google

I couldn't sleep until I was sure P'Din was truly safe.

"I can't rest now. I need to stay here. Lom is coming to the farm. If you're tired, you can sleep, Rose. I'm fine now."

"No, I'm not tired. I'll wait here with Lom and P'Din."

"But..."

"Don't stop me, please. P'Din knows how much I care."

Kasama nodded, accepting Tippapha's words, which made her feel touched. Perhaps it was Tippapha's sweet gaze that made her feel so vulnerable. Even without tears of regret, the soft hand holding hers still showed the fear that she would leave her.

Although he had not yet had a chance to ask about the words of caution and jealousy that Tippapha had said, the police arrived on time and began asking questions.
Kasama asked Moddaeng to take care of Tippapha and take her to rest while she spoke to the police officers.

"Moddaeng, go rest. I'll take care of Rose."

Kasama gave a small, uncomfortable cough as she realized someone was watching her with a mischievous smile. She asked Moddaeng to go rest so that she and Tippapha could be alone. After everything that had happened, they both needed some time to be close, until their feelings returned to normal.

But it probably wouldn't be long if they got together...

Machine Translated by Google

"Now, P'Din and Rose are in the living room. Please come this way, Lom."

"Thank you so much, Moddaeng, beautiful."

"Ah, Lom, you always like to tell Moddaeng the truth, don't you? But when you come in, please don't make any noise, or P'Din will get mad."

"Why can't I make noise?"

Wayo stared at the person next to Tippapha, who did not answer her question except with an enigmatic smile, and let her enter the living room to find out the truth for herself. When she entered, she found an answer that surprised her and thought that perhaps P'Din was not as worrisome as she had imagined, after hearing the bad news and rushing to the farm.

"P'Din!"

"Lom, shhh! Don't make noise, Rose just fell asleep."

"And why is Rose sleeping here?"

"She was so upset about what happened that she couldn't sleep."

"So how am I supposed to talk about the fire in the office with P'Din if she can't hear the noise?"

Now Wayo could hardly speak anymore, for Kasama gave him a reprimanding look and gestured for him to

Machine Translated by Google

She didn't want to disturb Tippapha, who was sleeping with her head on his shoulder. But when he planned the fake wedding, Wayo never imagined it would be this realistic. The situation already seemed sweet and sappy, but he never imagined that they would have to hold hands.

"Lom, you will wait until Rose wakes up to talk to P'Din."

"Ugh!" "I told you not to make noise, Lom. Or

so, better wait somewhere else."

"..."

Is this possible? Why doesn't anyone believe that P'Din has changed?

“If it were an outsider, it would be impossible to get to the office room without passing by the security cameras that P'Din installed in almost every spot on the farm. It seems that the criminal knew the angles of the cameras well, as he managed to avoid being seen.”

"But the police in charge of the case said there are traces that the criminal passed through Chomchan Farm, which probably happened after setting fire to the office. What is strange is that in the area near the river of Chomchan Farm, which is fenced, the fence has been damaged and there are signs of trespassing."

“From what Lom saw at the scene of the incident and the evidence, as well as witnesses such as Uncle Kla, who was the first to arrive and did not find anyone suspicious, Lom thinks that the

Machine Translated by Google

"The criminal had no intention of killing P'Din, but rather of diverting attention from Saenrak Farm. It seems that he just wanted to create a situation, because if he were going to kill for real, he wouldn't have just set fire to the entrance of the office, he would have set fire to the back to prevent P'Din from escaping."

"P'Din hasn't told Rose about the Chomchan Farm invasion yet, and he asked the workers to keep it a secret. Lom, don't tell Rose now. She's already dealing with a lot of difficult things, and P'Din doesn't want to burden her any further. She'll figure it out on her own."

“I agree. Don’t tell Rose for now. She’ll just get worried and that won’t help at all. Let’s wait until we have evidence and clearly understand why the criminals invaded the Chomchan farm. Then P’Din can tell Rose.”

"Okay, deal, Lom."

Kasama nodded, agreeing with Lom. She and Wayo were in agreement to keep this a secret for now. Tippapha had just gone through a difficult time last night, and the day before she was still disappointed with Thipakorn’s condition. Rose probably couldn’t handle any more heavy news now. Kasama also wanted to protect the important person’s heart with the same care.

“By the way, does P'Din agree with Lom's initial hypothesis that the Mahattanakorn may have some contact with Saenrak Farm?”

“Yes, I agree with Lom.”

Machine Translated by Google

“That means there is a traitor within the farm. Does P'Din have someone in mind that he suspects?”

“For now, I don’t know who it could be, but I’ll keep an eye out and be more careful with Rose’s safety.”

“P'Din, you can't just worry about your wife's safety with every breath. You have to take care of yourself too!”

She didn’t argue, which meant she had no way to refute it and that she accepted that what she said was true. It was rare to see Kasama so silent and unresponsive. If it weren’t for Rose, she probably would never have seen it in her life.

“P'Din, isn't Lom going to have lunch with you today?”

“After we return from the police station together, Lom said she was going to take care of something, and will be back later. She will spend the night at the farm.”

“And what did the police say? P'Din still hasn't told Rose whether the fire was an accident or arson.”

“I don’t think we should talk about this during meals. It might ruin your appetite.”

“P'Din, don't try to change the subject or hide this from Rose. Tell her the truth. Rose cares about you as much as anyone here.”

Even though we've only been living together for a short time, I already understand the situation and know the person who is my life partner well. How could I not know that P'Din would try to change the subject or avoid the topic? Even if she didn't

Machine Translated by Google

Tell me, I'll find out the truth. It would be better if P'Din told me at once.

“Yes, the police suspect it was arson and are looking for the perpetrators. They are two unknown men, but they have not yet ruled out the possibility of business involvement.”

“Because Rose caused trouble for P'Din.”

“The reason I don’t want to tell you this is because I know you’ll blame yourself, Rose. I’ve told you before, it’s not your fault.”

"But…"

“Let’s put this aside and get back to what we agreed on yesterday, okay?”

Kasama spoke in a soft but firm voice, as if the issue she raised was very important and still pending. This immediately attracted Tippapha’s attention.

"Yes!"

“Rose, when you say you care about P'Din, I understand. I also care and care for you in the same way.”

“P'Din, let's eat quickly, we can continue our conversation later…”

“But when you say you’re jealous, I don’t understand. Can you explain it to me?”

“…”

“If it’s not an act, Rose, why are you jealous of me?”

Machine Translated by Google

Why is P'Din pressuring me so much now?
She's not usually one to ask so many questions, and she never asks about what happened in the past. She always lets things slide. So why is she insisting so much now? It's leaving me speechless.

“It’s just… it’s just that I…”

“It doesn’t matter what the reason is, Rose. You can tell me anything. I don’t want to misunderstand or be seen as a fool.”

“If I tell you, do you promise you won’t look at me differently?”

“Yes, I promise. Go ahead, Rose.”

Tippapha put her hand on P'Din's and he reached out to hold it affectionately. It was rare for P'Din to touch her like this, and now there was no one else around to make a fake perfect couple. She was being genuine and caring towards her.

“It’s just that I… I like…”

“P'Din, are you okay?”

“The fire? What’s going on? Did you bring Lom too?”

“Yes, P'Din, Lom picked me up at the airport along with Fire. When they heard what happened at the farm, everyone came quickly, worried about you.”

"..."

Rose was about to tell me the reason for her jealousy, but why did the others show up unannounced? This made her

Machine Translated by Google

nervous. She quickly removed Din's hand and didn't know what to do. She even tried to disguise the situation.

“Come on, Lom and Fai, let’s have lunch together. I’ll ask Auntie Chan to prepare more food.”

“I'll help, Rose.”

“Why the look on your face, P'Din? Aren't you happy that Lom and Fai came looking for you?”

“You don’t know how to keep a secret, Lom. I already told you not to tell anyone, so you wouldn’t worry.”

“I didn’t tell, but you know, word got out. It was a scandal.”

“And Fai, if he finds out, he’ll be really angry and complain for days, saying that you got married and forgot to pay attention to others.”

Now, would it be possible to send everyone away from the farm at once? I don't want Wayo to return alone like last time, it would be better if I sent everyone, Apo, Wayo and Atjima, back to their respective places!

“I have something important to tell you, Lom and Fai.”

Kasama looked at the three cousins who were talking privately inside the house's office.
After mentioning that she had something important to discuss after lunch, she invited them, with three others present. Tippapha gave her space, saying that she was going to rest for a while because she was dizzy from lack of sleep the night before.

“I like Rose.”

Machine Translated by Google

“Wow, Lom is so surprised!”

“Yes, Fai is surprised.”

“Is there anything else? That was already obvious.”

“...”

Kasama watched the three of them react, not knowing what to think. Their reactions didn’t match the words they had said at all. From their expressions and attitudes, it was clear that none of them were really surprised or as surprised as they were pretending to be. They were just being provocative, annoying, and completely indifferent.

“So, everyone already knew about this?”

“Wow, even if you hadn’t said it, I could see under the light that you like Rose.”

“Hey, ask Lom. Even the planner got confused!
P'Din acting as a disguised wife, I can see that you are really involved.”

“And you, uncle, did you know about this or did Lom and Fai tell you?”

“How could I not know, P’Din? Even if I was busy with work, I couldn’t ignore how sweet you and Rose were acting in Prachuap. Even the employees were talking about it, and the secretary even said she wanted to see us marry you.”

Was the way she behaved so obvious? Or was it her heart calling her to act on her deepest feelings? She always told Tippapha that for her, it was not an act. She cared about her wife, she wanted to take care of her, protect her.

Machine Translated by Google

la, even though she knew she wasn't in a position to feel that way. But she couldn't control her own feelings.

But she was keeping those feelings inside, not wanting to confess and make Tippapha feel uncomfortable.
Tippapha already had enough problems to deal with. Furthermore, she knew that her wife saw her as a trustworthy person who would always protect her. She didn't expect Tippapha to reciprocate the same feeling, but just giving her good feelings made her happy. Even so, she didn't have the courage to say anything, afraid that her wife would be uncomfortable and wouldn't want to listen.

"P'Din, does Rose know about this?"

"Not yet, Lom. I… haven't had the courage to tell Rose that I like her."

"Hey! If you don't have the courage to tell your wife, how are you going to do it?"

"Or do you want Fai to tell Rose?"

"No, you don't need either. I'm going to tell Rose. I only called you guys to talk because I wanted to ask for advice on how to tell her without making it awkward, and without making it seem like something was wrong, like when I asked her to marry me."

Kasama quickly interrupted her cousin with concern. She knew that both Wayo and Atjima might be reckless and tell Tippapha before she had a chance to speak. Still, she wanted to tell the truth herself and believed that Tippapha might feel the same way, especially after what his wife had said yesterday about jealousy.

Machine Translated by Google

“If Rose says she’s jealous, can I assume she likes me too?”

“Moddaeng, have you had someone organize the room properly yet? Tonight, you and Fai are going to stay home, right?”

“Everything is ready, Mrs. Rose. Moddaeng has sent people to tidy everything up until it’s nice and clean.”

“Very well. We cannot let people say that P'Din did not know how to welcome guests well.”

“Mrs. Rose is an amazing wife, isn’t she? P’Din must be very happy to have married you.”

“It has nothing to do with that. I’m just helping to ease P’Din’s workload. It has nothing to do with being an amazing wife.” Tippapha changed the subject after Moddaeng’s compliment, which made her a little embarrassed, but she wasn’t going to let people see through it and start making fun of her.

In truth, she was still a little uncomfortable since she had almost blurted out her feelings to P'Din, but it was fortunate that Apo and Atjima arrived in time to interrupt. Otherwise, she would have been unable to look P'Din in the eye. She didn't know if she would feel the same way. Maybe it would be better to wait and tell her later, when she was more confident that she felt the same way.

same.

“I’ll go look for Aunt Chan to see if she needs anything.”

Machine Translated by Google

After fulfilling her role as housewife, Tippapha thought she should do something useful next.
So, he decided to look for Auntie Chan in the back kitchen, but before he could leave, a car stopped in front of the house, catching his attention, as well as Moddaeng's, who also looked in the same direction.

“What car is that, Rose?”

“I don’t know. I’ll go out and see.”

Apo, Wayo, and Atjima were all at home, so it would be strange if P'Din had any relatives come to visit her after the news of the fire at her beloved farm. She couldn't let this go. She needed to quickly go and receive the guests, like an exemplary wife.

“P’Din”

“Kaew?”

“Kaew, sorry it took me so long to come home.
I only heard the news from my father, who called me, so I sped up and came back from Bangkok. P'Din, are you okay? You weren't hurt anywhere, right?”

“Kaew, calm down. I’m fine.”

Kasama moved away from the proximity and gently pushed Kaew away, after being hugged and examined closely by the young woman who had just gotten out of the car, visibly worried. Kasama understood the situation, as she knew that Kaew was very worried about her, since she was in Bangkok for work and could not help her at the time of the accident.

Machine Translated by Google

incident on the farm. She must have been surprised and frustrated that he wasn't there for her at that moment.

“I’m glad P’Din is okay. I was so worried…”

“Kaew, you’re worrying too much. Even Mrs. Rose, my wife, isn’t that worried.”

“Never mind, Moddaeng. I’ll go find Auntie Chan. I don’t want to think about it!”

Tippapha looked away and walked away, trying not to show any signs of jealousy. Although Moddaeng probably wanted her to get closer to P’Din and show her position as his number one wife, she chose to walk away to calm her mixed feelings. After all, they had reconciled less than 24 hours ago, and P’Din had already hurt her again without realizing it.

“Hey, Ms. Rose? Why don’t you go talk to P’Din?”

“I’m going to the kitchen. That’s not my place.”

“Mrs. Rose…”

Atjima greeted the beautiful woman, who now seemed distant and with a pale face, something unusual for her, before passing by Lom and Tippapha, who would soon realize the situation when they saw Din talking to an assistant in a more private area, with P'Din watching from afar, arms crossed, not knowing how long he had been there.

“What happened, aunt? Why is Mrs. Rose so downcast?”

“Ask P'Din, she's the one who started it all.”

Machine Translated by Google

“What’s going on, Auntie? Lom and Fai, why are you all here?”

Kasama asked her family members after walking away from Kaew and entering the house, being intercepted by Apo, Wayo, and Atjima, who were blocking the way as if they were waiting for her, watching her with gazes that were hard to read, especially Atjima, who was looking on with a stern expression.

“Before you say you like Lady Rose, P'Din, take care of your own problems first.”

“What do you mean by that?”

“About P’Din and Kaew. I saw that she was hugging P’Din and holding his arm.”

“You’re mistaken, auntie. Kaew came because she was surprised by the news. Besides, Kaew and I are friends.”
We have worked together for many years. You know Kaew, why are you getting this wrong?”

“No. It’s not that I misunderstood. The person who’s wrong is Mrs. Rose.”

Apo shook her head slightly to correct the misunderstanding, making it clear that she was not the one who was confused. To P'Din's wife, Tippapha, it might be understandable, given what she had seen and her reactions.

“Why is Mrs. Rose like this?”

“I saw Kaew hugging P’Din. I saw everything like Auntie saw, and then she just walked away.”

“…”

Machine Translated by Google

“Now P'Din is going to get into trouble! His wife is going to abandon him!”

“Indecisive person! Mrs. Rose, go and resolve it with her!”

“Do I still have to plan their wedding? I’ve never planned a funeral, but I might have to start booking the hall.”

Should I be touched? Each of my family members is so supportive!

“You can tell P'Din that Lady Rose asked not to wait for dinner, as she will be skipping today's meal.”

Moddaeng came to convey her boss's wish, explaining that today she understood Madam Rose very well and that she was on the side of the legitimate wife, as she was disappointed with P'Din and Kaew's behavior.
Moddaeng saw everything clearly and felt that it was inappropriate, as it was disrespectful to his number one wife. So if Mrs. Rose became angry and jealous, it wouldn’t be surprising.

“Also, there’s one thing that Madam Rose didn’t ask me to tell you, but Moddaeng is going to tell P’Din anyway: Madam Rose has packed up her belongings and clothes and returned to her own room. That’s all. Moddaeng will be leaving now.”

“Even the employees are so angry with the boss, right?
Lom, there’s no need to investigate, you can clearly see what Mrs. Rose’s emotional state is now.”

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama listened to the information with an uncomfortable expression, because she didn't imagine that this time she would have made Tippapha as angry as in the last fights. What she had been through, sleeping in the office, seemed like something very small and simple compared to the current situation, which left her completely confused, not knowing where to start to try to solve it.

Or maybe if she went to P'Din now to talk and

try to reconcile, when the wife was so

irritated, maybe this time it wasn't Kaew who was

broken, but her head, being thrown at the door as she was

thrown out. "With all this happening, can P'Din still think about

eating?"

“I can’t eat anything, Lom. I just haven’t been able to think of a proper way to apologize to Mrs. Rose yet. If I don’t have a good excuse, she’ll either send me away anyway, or she won’t even open the door for me.”

“But if P'Din stands by and does nothing, the situation will only get worse. What do we do, uncle? You're the smartest one among us, so help me find a solution.”

“The person who caused this kind of thing has to resolve it. I can’t help.”

“Uncle, are you really not going to help me?”

“I can help you with one thing: go and resolve the situation with her. Marriage issues, no one else can resolve them for you, P'Din.” Yeah, there

was no point in continuing to stand still without knowing how to correct the mistake she had made. To sit around waiting any longer.

Machine Translated by Google

It wouldn't make things any better, and it wouldn't bring back the harmonious atmosphere she had with Tippapha. The best thing would be to go to her and be honest, face the situation and try to save the relationship.

As her family members said, if she knew what she felt and what she thought, she should have been honest and spoken to Tippapha directly, just as she had been brave enough to tell them how much she loved Mrs. Rose. She just had to be honest and express her feelings in front of the person who was important to her.

If I say that I like Mrs. Rose, will we be able to understand each other again?

“P'Din, don't mess with Rose. I don't want to talk about anything right now."

"I just want to clarify, okay? About what Rose got wrong."

"You can go. I'm not ready to argue with you, P'Din. I'm tired."

"But I have something important to tell you, Rose. At least let me speak, if you don't believe me, you can kick me out of the room after listening. I won't bother you anymore."

What could be so important that P'Din wanted to tell? But no... No, don't be fooled by this speech trying to smooth things over. P'Din is just the ranch owner who likes to manipulate. Even though she tries not to hurt Rose, she always brings up the issue with

Machine Translated by Google

Kaew, making Rose feel bad. How can I believe P'Din's words now, after this?

"I beg you, Rose. You told me yesterday that people's timing is not right. If we don't talk and resolve our differences now, I may never have another chance to talk to you..."

"I told you, P'Din, not to talk like that. Don't play with life and death!"

"Will you open the door for me to come in and talk now?"

"It's no use anymore, P'Din. If what you're going to say doesn't help me trust you, I'll send you away immediately."

Kasama quickly entered the room when the door opened slightly, seeing Rose's tired face. She knew this was the moment to speak before Rose changed her mind and closed the door, not wanting to do it anymore.

conversation.

"You want to talk, don't you? I gave you a chance to talk, how much longer are you going to stand there?"

"I like you, Rose."

"Are you serious, P'Din? Will this make me forgive you for the situation with Kaew?"

"No, it's not that. I really like you, Rose. I really like you."

Tippapha wanted to confess that when she heard those words, her heart skipped a beat. But still, she couldn't just ignore the image of P'Din with Kaew that night. She saw that P'Din tried to pull away, but she couldn't help but feel irritated at the sight of another woman.

Machine Translated by Google

hugging his P'Din and holding her hand, as if she wasn't wife number one.

"If you really like me, P'Din, you wouldn't have let someone else hug you or get so close to you.
If you really cared, you wouldn't want to see me suffering like this, right? Would you want me to go hug another man and hold hands with him?"

"No, I wouldn't do that, Rose."

"..."

"I know I messed up. Don't make me play with your feelings anymore, okay? I was just trying to set an example, but I couldn't help it."

Tippapha's face was now pale and she looked completely lost. She felt that after P'Din confessed his feelings so directly, without beating around the bush, she no longer knew what to think. She was beginning to realize that he was not so different from her, who also hid emotions.

"Rose, you're not mad at me anymore, are you?"

"No, I'll still think about it. Whether I'll forgive you or not."

She wanted to say that her heart was softer, that her anger had diminished, as soon as she heard P'Din's voice calling her at the door. That simple sound was enough to make her heart melt and feel her attention and affection. How could she resist that?

Especially when she came over and hugged her, something she had never done before.

"I really like you, Rose."

Machine Translated by Google

"You can say you like me, but that's not enough for me to believe you really do. If you really like me, you couldn't have acted like that with Kaew, right? Just saying it isn't enough."

"Do you want me to be completely honest?"

"Yes, P'Din. Tell me what you really feel. Stop beating around the bush and let me understand what you feel. I don't want to be confused anymore either."

"Will you be my wife?"

"Do you really want me to be your wife, P'Din?"

Oh, this is getting complicated... Kasama!

Chapter 12

Starting the offensive game to finish the game love.

Machine Translated by Google

"Oh, Rose!"

"P'Din, are you okay? I didn't mean to do this..."

Tippapha asked in surprise, after reacting faster than she had imagined. Hearing P'Din's words, she ended up raising her elbow with all her strength, as if it was the same reaction as when she accidentally knocked over a glass of milk. Now, she shoved her elbow into P'Din with such force that Din was knocked out of breath and fell onto the bed, clutching his side, as she quickly walked over to check if she was okay.

I need to explain that I'm not the type of person to use force, okay? But P'Din's unexpected words left me so shocked and confused that I didn't know how to react. She just came out and talked so seriously about wanting a wife and then asked me if I would like to be her wife. Who wouldn't be beside themselves with something like that?

"I'm fine, don't worry. I'm not hurt."

Kasama replied with a forced smile, trying to recover after the unexpected blow from Rose's elbow. The pain was strong, and she had to lean on the bed, smiling shyly to alleviate the situation.

"But P'Din was the one who did this, scaring Rose. Now you're hurt, see?"

"I wasn't kidding, Rose."

"You know what you said is a very serious thing, don't you?"

Tippapha looked into P'Din's eyes, waiting for a sign that she was serious. P'Din nodded,

Machine Translated by Google

confirming that she should trust Din and that he wasn't joking about what he had just said. Tippapha didn't know if her face was red from the

nervousness or if she was visibly blushing, but now she realized that her heart was reacting strongly to P'Din's words of "wife."

"I asked you to speak clearly, didn't I?"

"That was clear, but Rose... I wasn't prepared."

"I just want to be clear, I don't want you to get the wrong idea. I really like you, Rose."

"But our marriage was a lie."

"If I'm honest, I did everything I felt, without putting on an act. For me, everything I did for you, Rose, wasn't something forced. Are you going to hate me for thinking that way?"

Kasama confessed her feelings without hiding anything, without wanting to keep anything secret. Although she was usually a person who spoke before thinking and then tried to explain, as others always complained about her confusing communication, for Tippapha,

a single misunderstanding could ruin her happiness. Therefore, she didn't want there to be confusion with the people important to her.

"Why do you think I would be mad at you, P'Din?"

"Because what I did was beyond my duty. I just wanted to ask you to take my protection, but I really like you, Rose."

"I like you too, P'Din. So, can we consider that we're okay with this?"

"What?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I said I really like you, P'Din. I really like you, it's not just an act."

Tippapha smiled, finding it cute how her words made Kasama look completely speechless. She simply responded by saying that she liked her too and wanted her to know that she was just as happy as she was that they had finally resolved their misunderstandings and revealed their feelings to each other.

If we're not fooling ourselves or using the idea of a "fictitious marriage" as an excuse, we both know that we have feelings for each other. I like you and I'm happy with all the moments we spend together. I don't know if what we feel will turn into something like "I love you" or if that will ever happen, but for now, I don't want to fool myself anymore.

"What's wrong, P'Din? Just because I said I like you, you were speechless?"

"Do you really like me?"

"Of course. Who would lie about their feelings?"

"Can I hug you?"

"Of course you can! Actually, you didn't have to ask. You could have hugged me at any time."

"Sorry, I didn't mean to be rude."

"No need to apologize. Hugging someone you love is not wrong."

Kasama smiled broadly, and this time it was Tippapha who moved to hug Kasama, because she knew that in the state she was in, she would be slower than the

Machine Translated by Google

another, who was more impetuous. When the feeling of warmth enveloped her, she decided to return the hug and allow herself to be close, after they had resolved their misunderstandings.

"On the subject of being a wife..."

"It's not time yet! Although I like you, P'Din, the matter of being a wife is still early."

"No, it's not that. I just wanted to apologize for speaking so bluntly, without meaning to sound rude. I really didn't mean to be rude to you, Rose. I just wanted to be honest and show you that I mean what I say. Can we start off on the right foot, what do you think?"

"Start off right, how?"

"Can we really start dating? I mean, can we be a couple, be girlfriends?"

"P'Din, are you asking me out?"

Did you know that Kasama is now adorable, right? Even though she was the one who initiated the words about “wife”, when she teasingly joked, P’Din was so embarrassed that her cheeks and ears turned red. She nodded, responding without the courage to say more, as if she was at a loss for how to ask properly.

"Yes, I accept."

"Thank you so much, Rose."

"Let's start being girlfriends first. If P'Din is a dear girlfriend who stays by my side and doesn't make me cry, maybe in the future that person can soften my heart and become my wife."

Machine Translated by Google

"..."

If P'Din wants to have a wife, she'll have to behave herself and try, huh?

"Suddenly, every option on the menu is sweeter than ever.

Did Aunt Chan end up spilling some sugar?"

"It's just the same as always, P'Din. It's not sweet at all. Isn't it, Rose?"

"Auntie Chan, Lom, Fai, I'm sorry for disturbing you all by making you wait until late for dinner."

"It's okay, Rose. The important thing is that you've resolved things with P'Din."

Tippapha smiled at her family members, who were always trying to understand her situation, as was P'Din. Even after a little drama and her making a fuss over a misunderstanding, everyone waited until she and P'Din had sorted things out so they could eat together with the others.

"Sorry, auntie, tomorrow you're going back to the resort and I wasn't able to welcome you properly."

"Don't worry, P'Rose. I don't care. Thank you for making up the room for us."

"P'Rose? Did P'Din ask everyone to call me that?"

"No. P'Din didn't say anything. Auntie Chan, Lom and Fai said they wanted to call you that."

Machine Translated by Google

In fact, she had just started dating P'Din, so the term P'Rose still seemed
far from reality. But if she were to correct it, she would have to give a long explanation, so she preferred to let it go. After all, if people were starting to call me that, she preferred to make it clear that she would accept the title of P'Din's "wife."

"Rose, if P'Din does anything that displeases you, you can tell me. I'll sort it out for you."

"Now, is Fai on Rose's side?"

"Of course! Of course I'm on her side, P'Din."

"It's no problem, Fai, thank you very much. But if I have any misunderstandings with P'Din again, I will resolve it with her directly. I won't let the situation drag on."
Thank you very much to everyone who was concerned."

"I won't let you down, Rose."

"Auntie Chan, there's no need to serve dessert now. Fai already said that this scene here is sweeter than any dessert."

P'Din told her that he had already told the other three about his feelings, so she joked a little, making fun of her for taking longer to tell her than her family. But it was all just a joke, as she wished P'Din had courted her more. The fact that P'Din was taking things seriously, even sharing it with important people in his life, and the fact that she was accepted by Din's family made her feel more secure about her position.

Ultimately, at the "Saenrak" farm, she was above everyone else and took the place at the

Machine Translated by Google

P'Din's heart as someone she really liked.
For her, that was enough to make her feel at the top.
Even if someone tried to get in their way, he knew that as long as they stuck together, no one could interfere.

"P'Din, are you going to work now?"

"Yes, today I'll need to ask Fai to visit Uncle Thip and Rose for me."

"Don't worry, P'Din. I'll take care of Rose for you."

Tippapha turned and looked at Uncle Atjima, who offered to visit her father in the hospital. After that, P'Din had an important work commitment and had to leave along with her personal assistant, Madam Kaew.
This did not make her upset or sad, as she had already cleared everything with P'Din and was at peace with her. She wanted to act in accordance with her new position as P'Din's official wife and girlfriend.

Yes, now they like each other and are a couple...

"Don't worry either, Mrs. Rose. Kaew will take care of everything."

"I don't want to bother Mrs. Kaew. P'Din is already an adult, why can't she take care of herself? Isn't that right, P'Din?"

"That's it, Kaew, you don't have to take care of me."

Machine Translated by Google

"But you've just been through a difficult situation. At least I'd like to help ensure your safety."

"Leave it to the police. You're an assistant, not a bodyguard."

Kasama looked at Atjima, who was smiling at the corner of his mouth without expressing an opinion or joining the conversation. Meanwhile, she was looking at her wife, asking for help. In the morning, Apo went to the airport to return to work, and Wayo also left to investigate something important that had been reported. The “Saenrak” farm now had only these members, and within two days, Atjima would also have to return to the mine.

"Kaew, go ahead to the car, I'll follow you."

"No problem, P'Din, we can split up here. Father should be waiting." "Is that so? I'll take

Rose to the car."

"Hey, P'Din, didn't you forget something?"

"Ah!"

"I hope you have a good day. When you're done working, come home soon. Rose is waiting, P'Din, don't delay."

She then kissed P'Din on the cheek in a tender manner, something softer and more confident than her previous attempts at showing affection. What she was trying to do was already clear, but now, with a more sincere and defined relationship, she was able to give a more bold kiss, certain of her place in P'Din's life. And this did not go unnoticed by the assistant, who was watching closely.

"Wait, Rose."

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, P'Din..."

"With that, the good morning for me has already begun."

“...”

For both of us, the good morning started when P'Din gave me a kiss on the cheek in front of Kaew. She seemed more confident and ready to express her love publicly.

"P'Rose!"

"Yes! What's wrong, Fai?"

"I've seen you thoughtful since we left the farm, so

I decided to start a conversation, because I didn't want us to

remained silent the whole time." "Sorry, I was

just distracted thinking about some things."

But she wouldn't have the courage to tell Fai that she was thinking about P'Din's kiss, which left her cheek warm and made her heart beat faster.
After all, it was the first time P'Din had acted so openly and publicly in front of Kaew. How could she not feel emotional and lose her composure? It seemed that P'Din had decided not to make her sad again. If P'Din said that his weak point was not knowing how to express his feelings, then his actions were saying it all more clearly than words could ever express.

"Do you already miss P'Din after such a short time?"

"Yes... Oh, no! That's not it, Fai!"

Machine Translated by Google

"Those who are in love miss each other, it's not strange. It's something natural."

"It's not love, Fai. To be honest, P'Din and I are still starting to like each other, so we decided to try dating. Love is still too early for us, let's leave that for the future."

Tippapha spoke sincerely, as someone who had never been in a romantic relationship before. Just liking P'Din was something unexpected for her. Because of this, she felt that using the word "love" would be rash for someone who considered her as a girlfriend. In just over a month, if she already declared that all she felt was love, it would seem hasty and superficial.

"So, love has an expiration date, is that it, Rose? I think love is not something rigid, there is no formula.
Love is just that, and that's it. You can meet someone in a day, and if it's love, it's true love. Or you can meet someone for ten years, and if it's not love, no matter how hard you try, it never will be."

"You talk about love, so you have experience, don't you, Fai?"

"No, P'Rose. For me, love is nonsense. Infatuation can also make you lose focus. I will never fall in love or lose myself for anyone in my life."

"But you talk about love as if you know everything, Fai."

"P'Lom likes to exaggerate. If she finds someone beautiful, she says it's love at first sight."

"Should I tell P'Lom that you're talking bad about her?"

Machine Translated by Google

The beautiful young woman laughed as she realized that,
Suddenly, Aunt Atjima was badmouthing her sister for no reason.
She didn't know if Wayo was there listening, hidden, since she
had gone out to investigate something important. "You can tell P'Lom,
I don't have
fear of the truth."

"I'm kidding. I don't like causing fights between siblings."

"But there are some people who like to cause discord between couples.

It doesn't matter if it's love or just a crush, P'Rose, trust P'Din."

"...."

"I just want you to trust P'Din, like I do."

"Why did P'Din ask Kaew to stop by Chomchan Farm?"

"I wanted to cut some roses to take to Rose."
"P'Rose is the luckiest woman in the world, isn't she? P'Din cares that much."

"Yes, I love Rose very much."
Kasama talked about the person she had just confessed her feelings
to, but in reality, she meant that she loved him too. However, the word
"like" already made Tippapha almost not believe her. The word "love" would
require more time, and she wanted to let the relationship go.

Machine Translated by Google

gradually develop, according to the feelings of both of them. Although the time they spent together was only a little over a month, the feeling that was born within her was so clear that she no longer had any doubts.
She was sure.

I was sure that P'Din fell in love with Rose.
In love, and very much so...

"May I ask why it was Rose?"

"Why do you want to know?"

"Because P'Din already told me that he didn't care about love. P'Din didn't want anyone to come and mess with his life. Do you still remember what he said after Father Kasidit passed away?"

"I remember, Kaew. I didn't forget what I said."

"So why did you change your mind, P'Din?"

"Because it was Rose who changed me, Kaew. I never thought I would have the chance to know love. But Rose made me understand what love is and made me happy again.
So I'm sure I love Rose."

Kasama, with her radiant face, said the words “I love you” for the first time, to the woman she had given her heart to and with whom she was ready to spend the rest of her life, caring for and protecting Tippapha. Even if Thipakorn recovered or no longer left his daughter in her care, Kasama was sure that she was ready to formally ask his permission, so that he would trust her to take care of his important person from now on.

Machine Translated by Google

"Okay, let's go. I need to take the roses to...
Kaew! Why is your hand bleeding?"

"I cut myself, P'Din. I just wanted to pick a rose, but I forgot they have thorns."

"Is everything okay? You're not hurt, are you?"

"No, P'Din. The cut is small, it didn't hurt me."

"When you get back, put medicine on the wound. If you leave it like this, it could get infected."

"P'Din, I already told you, it really didn't hurt."

"It's a shame we're playing slower than the Mahattanakorn, we're a step behind."

"It's not something unexpected. I already imagined that they would need to eliminate the people hired to work, because they wouldn't let the girls get close to the real boss."

Today, police found the bodies of two unknown men, presumably foreign workers, who were taken to a field and left there so that passersby could find them and alert the police. They are now awaiting the results of the autopsy to see if there is any connection to the arson case. But from the characteristics of the bodies, it appears that they may be the criminals responsible for the fire at the Saenrak Farm, which occurred a few days earlier, as an attempted assassination attempt.

Machine Translated by Google

to mock, saying that they will never be able to get to the real person responsible.

"These guys are smart and have a well-thought-out plan. That's why they chose to use foreign workers to do the job, unlike the time they sent criminals to follow us."

"I think the Mahattanakorn are now feeling overconfident, and they think we have managed to fool them and that we are at a disadvantage, as we planned for them to think. Now they think they are above the law. It is time for us to start playing aggressively and hit back."

"Do you think now is the right time?"

"Yes, but once we start attacking, P'Din and Rose will have to be more vigilant than ever. I'll send people to help ensure the farm is safe and prevent them from causing trouble again. Also, it's possible that the traitor hiding on the farm will reveal his identity very soon."

Watinwanich was never weak. He only retreated when he was pressured by the other party, assessing the situation with thought and cunning. If he had resisted against them, the cost would have been greater. He waited until the enemy began to tire and think himself victorious, so he was now ready to attack and retaliate with full force.

"Let's begin the attack, Lorn. I'm ready to face whatever comes!"

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose! Something big happened!"

"What's wrong, Moddaeng? You're screaming so loud it sounds like you're trying to destroy the farm!"

"When Moddaeng saw the news on TV, she saw that the police went to Nabanan Farm and searched with a warrant."

"Has the news on TV ended yet? What did the news say?"

"The news content said that there was information that the father, Wasupon, and Mr Wasu might be involved in an international drug trafficking network. Now, the two have been called to testify at the police station."

Tippapha listened to Moddaeng's news with growing concern. If this was true, it meant that Wayo and P'Din might be somehow involved in the search being conducted, as P'Din had told her that Wayo was investigating a secret of the Mahattanakorn family and that Lieutenant Wayo had influential contacts in the police.

"If the police have enough evidence to arrest the two of them, that would mean Rose would be safe now, wouldn't it?"

"It won't be as simple as you think, Moddaeng. I think Mr.

Wasupon and Mr. Wasu will surely find a way to save themselves. They must have hired good lawyers by now and will not allow the police to arrest them."

The owner of the beautiful face spoke with a sense of apprehension and unease. Even though the news that was released helped her and P'Din feel a little more at ease, since it meant that the

Machine Translated by Google

Mahattanakorn probably wouldn't dare to act above the law at this point, due to the investigation, but that didn't mean she and P'Din could rest easy or feel safe from bad people.

"Mister Lorn!"

"Rose, you saw the news that came out, right?"

"Yes, but I'm feeling very uncomfortable."

"Why? I think the news about the Mahattanakorn is good for Mrs. Rose's situation."

"I'm worried about P'Din. Today she went to a seminar too.

Mister Lorn, could you take me to see P'Din?"

"Rose, why don't you wait here? It's already late, and as soon as he finishes work, P'Din should return to the farm."

Tippapha shook her head, refusing Wayo’s suggestion with a stubborn feeling, which might even make P’Din’s wife uncomfortable. She knew that Wayo was not like P’Din, who always obliged her in everything when she behaved stubbornly. But now, even if Wayo complained silently or got angry with herself, she would have to insist that the lieutenant take her to P’Din. Only then would she feel more at ease and could she ease her anxiety.

"Please, Mrs. Lom, take me to P'Din as soon as possible!"

Machine Translated by Google

"Thank you very much, Kasama, for being kind enough to attend the meeting and be the guest speaker to share your knowledge."

"It's a pleasure. I hope the experiences I shared about running Saenrak Farm will be useful to everyone."

"It was very valuable guidance. I am sure that today small farmers and business owners have learned a lot."

"I also thank Mr. Pramote for remembering me. Anyway, now I have to go."

Kasama bid farewell to those present after the successful conclusion of the meeting. Everything was going well, and besides, she had already heard some good news from Wayo. So she was not so surprised to hear the assistant talk about the Mahattanakorn family's movements, who were being investigated and playing an aggressive game.
He heard this with some tranquility.

"Mrs. Din, I heard that the Nabanan farm was raided by the police, right? They found evidence of links to a drug trafficking ring. Now, Mr. Wasupon and Mr. Wasu are being questioned at the police station."

"It's really big news, isn't it?"

"Yes, it's big news. But why aren't you surprised by it, Din? I was very surprised
when I saw the news."

"I'm not surprised by something I already knew."

"Like this?"

Machine Translated by Google

The boss looked at her assistant, who seemed more surprised than she was. After hearing Kasama’s calm response, she kept her expression neutral, not getting nervous or anxious. To her, this was just the beginning of an aggressive game. She and Wayo knew that this would not be enough to incriminate the Mahattanakorn family. It would take more time and caution to solve the crimes, and that would not be easy.

"It's not just the Mahattanakorn who are watching my movements."

"What do you mean by that?"

"I suspect there is a traitor infiltrating the Saenrak farm. Do you have any suspicions about this?"

"No, I don't. Is something like that going on? Do you have any suspects in mind? I can help watch and keep an eye out."

"Don't worry about it. Let me take care of it."

"So, what do you say we head back to the farm now? I'll get the car to take you."

"You can go get the car. I'll go out and wait in front."

Kasama looked at the assistant who waved and went to the hotel parking lot to get the car. At that moment, Tippapha’s phone rang, and she quickly answered it.

[Has P'Din left yet, Rose?]

"Yes, I'm done with the work. I'm going to the farm now."

[I asked Lorn to take me to you. We are waiting in front of the

Machine Translated by Google

hotel.]

"Rose, did you come to pick me up? You didn't need to worry so much, I was already on my way there."

[I was worried about you. When I saw the news, I became very anxious.]

"Don't worry about it. Where is Lorn's car?
I'll go out and find you."

[P'Din, don't you see Rose? Your fan is here waiting to take you home.]

"Stay where you are, I'll find you soon."

Tippapha spoke in a cheerful voice. She was waiting across the street, waving at P'Din, who was coming over with a smile. The simple happiness of seeing each other and smiling together was enough to fill their hearts with joy. "Rose, watch out!" **Bang!**

But it seemed like Tippapha's happiness was taken away from her in a second...

After hearing P'Din's desperate scream calling out his name with a panicked expression, Wayo pulled her away from the line of fire of a gun that a criminal was stealthily aiming from behind a tree near the hotel. Wayo then grabbed his gun and prepared to shoot back. Fortunately, P'Din noticed the danger before the criminal, which prevented the attack.

However, the criminal diverted the shot from his aim to hit the person who was protecting her. The bullet hit P'Din, piercing her body and causing blood to run down the white shirt she was wearing, which was the best choice for that day. Kasama's body was

Machine Translated by Google

gradually falling to the ground, with her rushing to support her body.

"P'Din!"

"Lom, protect Rose."

"Someone please call an ambulance!"

Chaos ensued before onlookers began to gather around the hotel after hearing the gunshot.
Several more shots followed as Lieutenant Wayo tried to stop the criminal, but unfortunately could not pursue him to arrest him as she was concerned for the safety of Din, who was injured, and Tippapha.

"Resist, P'Din, don't sleep, talk to me, please..."

"Rose..."

"P'Din, you can't leave me. Don't leave me like this..."

"Don't cry."

Kasama fought against the pain of her still-bleeding wound and forced a smile. Even though Tippapha was not afraid and was helping to staunch the bleeding with her hands, staining her clothes with the fresh blood, P'Din's weakness was clear. The blood continued to flow, and she was losing strength, on the verge of losing consciousness.

"I love you, P'Din."

"...."

But it seemed that her words of love did not reach P'Din, who was already unconscious due to the severity of his injuries. No matter how much she tried to express how much she loved him, the words could not reach the one who could no longer hear.

Machine Translated by Google

"Do you hear me, P'Din? Please open your eyes to hear my words of love. Come back, hear my love for you..."

Please don't let Rose's words of love be spoken too late.

Chapter 13

Machine Translated by Google

"Doctor, how is P'Din? She's safe, right?"

"Fortunately, the bullet did not hit any vital organs.
We performed surgery to remove the bullet, and now the patient is out of danger."

"Can I come in and visit you?"

"At the moment, family members are still unable to visit her.
We will take the patient from the operating room to the recovery room. If she is free of infection and recovers well, we will be able to release her to continue her recovery at home in a few days. Don't worry."

"Thank you so much, Doctor. Thank you for saving P'Din's life."

Tippapha expressed her gratitude in an emotional voice to the doctor for saving P'Din's life, who was now out of danger. She had lost consciousness before being taken to the hospital, and Rose, along with Wayo, waited anxiously for news in front of the operating room.

After a long time, the doctor finally brought good news, confirming that P'Din had kept his promise and would not abandon her before hearing something important from her lips.

"Now that the doctor has confirmed that P'Din is safe, how about you go back and get some rest, Ms. Rose?
Tomorrow morning, I will bring her back to the hospital to be with her."

"No, Mrs. Lom, I'm not going anywhere. I'll stay here until P'Din wakes up."

Machine Translated by Google

"At least take a shower and change your clothes. Your clothes are covered in blood."

"I've already asked Moddaeng to bring me clean clothes and personal items to change into right here. I'll be staying at the hospital with P'Din."

Rose wasn't going anywhere. She wouldn't leave her at a time when she needed support and someone by her side more than ever. She wanted to be the first person P'Din would see when he opened his eyes, just as she anxiously waited for her father, who was also in the ICU of the same hospital, to wake up and see her again.

She prayed that the two people she loved would come back to be by her side...

"Mr. Wasu! What are you doing?"

"What's wrong? Why are you looking at me with a more serious expression than the police investigating my farm?"

"Why did you send someone to shoot Ms. Din? That wasn't in the deal."

"Calm down, let's talk without any emotions on display.
After all, we're on the same side, aren't we? Why fight amongst ourselves, Kaew?"

Wasu mentioned the name of Kasama's loyal assistant, Kaew, which the naive Kasama never
suspected. Din trusted her so much that he had no idea that Kaew was a traitor, providing

Machine Translated by Google

information about the movements of the Saenrak farm to facilitate Mahattanakorn's plans.

"You broke your word first. You hurt Mrs.
Din. I no longer have any reason to honor our agreement. I came here to say that from now on, I will no longer send you any information about the Saenrak farm. I am withdrawing!"

"If you've entered the game, you won't get out as easily as you want, Kaew."

Kaew glared at Wasu's subordinates blocking the exit. They looked intimidating, as if they were telling her that she had thrown herself into the lion's den to get what she wanted. But now that Mahattanakorn had played dirty with someone important to her, Kaew was willing to give up. However, Wasu didn't seem inclined to let her off so easily.

"If you don't keep helping me, I can guarantee that Din will know the whole truth. She will find out that you have loved her for over a decade, but she never saw it. She chose Rose as her wife, even when the place by her side should have been yours. Are you really going to give up now? If we stay together, in the end, Din will be yours, and Rose... I will take care of her."

"And how can I trust you not to hurt Din again?"

"Come on, Kaew. Everyone makes mistakes. In fact, I didn't even send anyone to attack Din today. Why would I do that, knowing that you're giving me information so I can separate Rose from her?"

"If it wasn't you, then who could have done it? Din has no other enemies."

Machine Translated by Google

"It was probably my father. He was pissed that Din defied him, so he decided to just scare her. It wasn't meant to be fatal."

Wasu mentioned that Din was only shot once and that it wasn't something to kill her. Furthermore, according to him, his father just wanted to show that Din had messed with the wrong person. If he really wanted to kill her, he would have shot her in the head once.

"I don't care if it was you or your father, Wasupon. What matters is that if you want me to continue passing on information about the farm, you must not let something like this happen to Din again."

"Okay, I promise I won't let mistakes like this happen anymore. Let's complete our plan successfully."

"As for Rose, do whatever it takes and resolve this soon, before I lose my patience. Because if you don't find a way to get her away, I'll take care of it myself!"

**"That's why I enjoy working with you, Kaew.
You are relentless."**

"..."

The owner of the delicate face, who had just regained consciousness, looked around the clean, white room, smelling the characteristic smell that indicated she was in a hospital. Kasama adjusted the focus of her vision for a moment until she noticed the warmth of the hand holding hers. The person who had given him that warmth throughout the night was asleep next to him, without moving away.

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose..."

"P'Din! Are you awake?"

"Yes..."

Kasama replied in a hoarse and weak voice, as if she still didn't have much strength to speak. The pretty-faced young lady immediately hurried to pour a glass of water and adjusted the bed to help her drink through a straw, moistening her dry throat.

"Why are you crying?"

"It's just... I'm so happy! Really happy."

"Crybaby."

Din smiled softly as she ran her hand over Tippapha's soft cheek, who was crying with joy at seeing her return from the brink of death. At that moment, Kasama admitted that when she was shot, she had felt fear. Not of the end of her life, but of the fact that after death, Tippapha would no longer be by her side. That was why, no matter the hardships, she had fought to return and protect her, as she had promised.

"P'Din, promise you'll never leave me."

"Yes..."

"Promise first."

"I promise."

"Without you, I wouldn't be able to continue living."

Tippapha spoke in a low tone, filled with uncertainty and fear, as he held Kasama's hand against his face.

Machine Translated by Google

and placed a soft kiss on her back, a gesture full of love and care.

"I don't even have a wife yet."

"What?"

"I won't die so easily."

"P'Din! This is no time to joke around. I'm serious. I'm very worried about you. That criminal was aiming for me, but you ended up getting hurt instead of me."

"That's not true. They were probably targeting me from the start."

"Since I came back into your life, it seems like I've only brought you trouble."

"That's not true. Don't think like that. You are the happiness of my life."

Kasama shook her head vigorously in disagreement, not caring about the pain in the surgery wound on her abdomen. She would not allow the person she loved to continue with a misunderstanding, insisting that she was her happiness, not a burden.

"P'Din, don't move or make any sudden movements. What if the stitches open?"

"I'll force the stitches to break if you don't stop blaming yourself."

"But..."

"How about instead of blaming yourself, you take care of me? That way, I'm sure I'll recover quickly."

Machine Translated by Google

"You don't even need to ask, I already want to take care of you myself."

Din smiled as he realized he had managed to make his beloved stop blaming herself. Then, with a spontaneous gesture, Kasama brought her soft hand closer, which was holding his, and placed a soft kiss on the back of his beautiful wife's hand. Tippapha, understanding the gesture, extended his hand to make it easier, preventing her from moving too much.

"Right now, it feels like me, Na and Fai are intruders, doesn't it? We've flown to Chiang Rai more times than birds."

"Nah, Lom, Fai... Why didn't you knock on the door before coming in?"

"..."

Tippapha, with a start, pulled away from Kasama, quickly withdrawing her hand while displaying a face flushed with embarrassment. Her expression was so transparent that Fai could not help but smile amusedly. Everyone there had witnessed the sweetness between the two, especially with the arrival of Apo, Wayo and Atjima, who had come together to visit Kasama that morning at the hospital.

"P'Din, could you take better care of yourself? If you keep getting hurt every week, Nah will end up saying the resort is going bankrupt."

"Fai, it's not like I want to get shot. It hurts, you know?"

"Lom has already been shot by bandits. It's only a little more painful than an ant bite. But P'Din is all dramatic because he's asking for pampering from his wife."

Machine Translated by Google

"You only got grazed by a bullet, Lom. When I came to visit you, you were complaining so much I thought I'd have to amputate your leg. P'Din was hit by a lodged bullet, and it required surgery to remove it."

"No! No need to bring up old stories!"

"You guys can continue arguing at home. Leave P'Din here with Rose."

"A-ha! P'Din wants to be alone with his wife, huh? Fai knows his stuff."

Tippapha let out a laugh as he saw P'Din give him a slightly irritated look. She seemed slightly bothered by the presence of her family members, who were teasing her while they were paying a family visit in the middle of the hospital. Besides, Fai seemed willing to stay longer, having already found a place to settle down.

"Rose! Something serious happened!"

"Moddaeng, what's wrong? Don't shout, this is a hospital, not our home."

"Mr. Thipakorn... He's woken up! The doctor said he regained consciousness a little while ago. I came running to tell you!"

"My father!"

"P'Din, don't try to get up. Fai will accompany Rose to see her father.

Take care of P'Din, Ná and Lom."

Kasama watched as Atjima volunteered to accompany Tippapha in her place, as she could not force herself to get out of bed because of the surgery. Even if she tried to drive, the effort would tear her stitches.

Machine Translated by Google

surgery. Apo and Wayo insisted that she wait for good news right there. Kasama, although apprehensive about not being able to go, felt relieved to realize that after going through such a difficult situation, they finally seemed to be getting good news.

“Khun Din, Kaew came to visit you.”

“Ah, Khun Kaew, please come in.”

“Hello, Khun Ná, Khun Lom.”

Kasama looked a little disappointed when she realized that the person who had just arrived was not the person she had expected, bringing good news. It was not Tippapha, but Kaew, who had come to visit her in the hospital. Kaew greeted Apo and Wayo, who were also in the room, in a friendly manner, showing that they had known each other for many years.

“Kaew, thank you so much for coming to visit me.”

“Khun Din, how are you? Does the wound hurt a lot?”

“I’m fine, Kaew. In a few days the doctor will release me to continue my recovery at home.”

“I’m so lucky you’re safe, Khun Din. I only heard about it from my father when I got back to the farm. Hearing that you were shot made me very worried. This morning, before I came to the hospital, I stopped by a temple to make merit and pray that you won’t get hurt again. I’m very worried about you.”

Machine Translated by Google

“But yesterday, when it happened, Khun Kaew didn’t know anything? You were at the seminar with P’Din, why did you only find out from Uncle Kla?”

“I really didn’t know, Khun Lom. When we parted ways, Khun Din asked me to pick up the car from in front of the hotel. That’s why I didn’t see anything. When I came back with the car, I couldn’t find her. I tried calling, but no one answered. I only found out about it from my father.”

“Lom, don’t pressure Kaew. She must have been very scared too.”

Wayo interrupted the line of questioning as he thought Kaew's answer didn't sound very convincing.
Considering that the incident was so serious, with a large number of onlookers at the scene, it was strange that Kaew hadn't noticed anything.

“And Khun Rose? Where is she? Didn’t she come to stay with you, Khun Din? My father said that she didn't go back to farm since last night.” “Khun Rose went to visit the Mr. Thipakorn. It seems he has woken up...”

“Nah, go check on Khun Rose. She’s been gone for a while and hasn’t come back yet. Tell her I miss her, please.”

Kasama intentionally interrupted, causing Apo to stop talking before sharing important information in front of Kaew. Apo understood the situation and left the room without revealing anything unnecessary.

“Khun Lom, why don’t you take a break to eat?
I'll stay here with
Khun Din until Khun Rose comes back.”

Machine Translated by Google

“No need. You can leave, Kaew, and so can Lom.”

“But how will Khun Din be alone? You are still injured and can’t move properly.”

“My wife will take care of me. Leave it to Khun Rose. Don’t worry, Kaew.”

"Spirit, return, return to Khun Din. May Khun Din be free from all misfortunes."

"Thank you, Aunt Chan. And thank you all for your concern."

Kasama expressed her gratitude to Aunt Chan, the elder of Saenrak Farm, for her kind blessings, as well as to the farm workers who had gathered to welcome her back home. They had probably heard the news from Uncle Kla, the head of the workers, that the doctor had allowed her to leave the hospital and continue her recovery at home today.

"Let's go inside so you can rest, P'Din."

Tippapha gently supported his wife as they walked slowly into the house. Four days had passed since P’Din was ambushed and shot in broad daylight, but the police had yet to catch the culprit. In fact, the latest lead suggested that the suspect might have fled the country to go into hiding. The investigation into the suspicions involving the Mahattanakorn family also seemed to be progressing very slowly.

Machine Translated by Google

"Finally, I'm back home. I've missed this place so much."

"And P'Din didn't miss me either?"

"But N'Rose was with me in the hospital every day."

"So that means you didn't miss me?"

"I missed the house—especially with N'Rose in it.
Being at home with you is much better than being in the hospital."

Such a clever and sincere answer left her, who was hopelessly in love with P'Din, completely enchanted. If P'Din had simply replied directly that he missed her, it wouldn't have made her heart race and flutter as much as this fondly thought-out answer did.

"Exactly! Rose won't let P'Din change the mood by staying in a hospital again."

"I don't want to get hurt anymore either. It takes so many days to recover before I can go back to work."

"Forget about work for now, okay? Don't even think about it. Just rest and let me take care of you now."

"Sorry for making N'Rose work so hard to take care of me, when I know you'd also like to spend more time taking care of Mr. Thip."

"Just knowing that P'Din is safe and seeing that Dad is starting to show positive signs is enough to make me happy."

"Mr. Thip will make a full recovery for sure."

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose, may I ask why P'Din wanted me to keep Dad's recovery a secret?"

Tippapha asked about something that had been troubling and worrying her, but that she had not yet had the opportunity to discuss openly, as it was not appropriate to discuss it in the hospital. She waited to question P'Din at home. Now that her father had awakened and was able to breathe on his own, the doctor authorized the removal of the ventilation tube and the replacement of an oxygen mask. Although he was still unable to communicate or talk, and still required ongoing care, the fact that he had awakened was already great news to her. “It is because I suspect that there is an informant from Wasu infiltrated into the Saenrak farm. If this information were to leak out, I fear that Mr. Thip would be in even

greater danger.”

“Are you saying there is a traitor, P'Din?”

“Yes. I haven’t come to a conclusion yet as to who it is, but only you, me, my family members, and Moddaeng know about it. Don’t let this information reach anyone else.”

“Don’t worry, P’Din. I’ve already instructed Moddaeng to keep this a secret.” Moddaeng even swore that rather than be struck by lightning, she would rather never have anyone interested in her. With such dedication, it was certain that she would keep my father’s condition a complete secret. But who was the traitor P’Din mentioned at the Saenrak Farm?

“But now, P'Din, how about getting some rest? That way you'll recover faster.”

Machine Translated by Google

“I’m fine now. I rested so much in the hospital that I got bored.”

“Don’t insist, P’Din. Didn’t you hear the doctor say that you need to get plenty of rest?”

“I heard the doctor, just as I heard something you said to me.”

“What did I say?”

“I have a feeling that before I passed out, you said something to me. But I couldn’t hear it properly. Could you repeat it for me?”

“…”

P'Din was talking about the time Rose confessed her love...

At that moment, she spoke impulsively, without hesitation, because she was overcome with fear and out of her mind.
She had said “I love you” dozens or hundreds of times, both at the scene of the incident and on the way to the hospital. But now that she had asked it so directly and with an innocent smile, how could she suddenly say it again without warning? She was completely speechless.

“Can you say that to me one more time?”

“Do you want to hear it that much, P'Din?”

“Yes, please say so.”

“Then come closer, P'Din. That way I can tell clearly.”

Kasama approached her beloved with obedience and kindness, like the good wife she was. Tippapha then,

Machine Translated by Google

played a trick, approaching to whisper only a “good night” in her ear, instead of the words P'Din expected. As a complement, he gave her a light kiss on the cheek, in an attempt to convince her to rest and sleep well.

“Good evening, P'Din, my most lovely girlfriend,” said Rose.

"Tonight, Aunt Chan will prepare P'Din's favorite dishes, won't she? P'Din told me that she is tired of the hospital food and really misses the taste of Aunt Chan's cooking."

"If P'Din said so, then I'll cook to my best!"

"Is there anything I can help you with? I'll be your assistant.
So when P'Din wakes up, he'll have a delicious meal waiting for him."

"So please help auntie wash the vegetables and cut them to prepare everything."

"Of course, Aunt Chan! You can trust my work."

At the very least, she wanted to participate in preparing this special meal to welcome P’Din back home. It made her feel useful, just as P’Din had prepared breakfast for her on the first day after their wedding. Although she wasn’t very skilled in the kitchen, with Aunt Chan’s guidance and teachings, she believed that she could develop as a chef.

Machine Translated by Google

a real housewife in the future and become the best wife for P'Din,
not just in name. "Rose, what are you doing here?"

"I'm helping Aunt Chan in the kitchen!"

"Then you need to stop for a moment and come with me now."

"I'm busy. If there's anything, just say it, Moddaeng."

"Mrs. Kaew came to the house. She said she wanted to talk to
P'Din about work. When I told her she was resting, she said she would wait.
Now she's sitting in the living room. What should I tell her, Rose?"

Does this Mrs. Kaew think she can meddle wherever she wants just
because she considers herself close to P'Din? It's already clear that
between the two of them, I'm P'Din's legitimate wife and number one
girlfriend. Moddaeng has already told her that she needs to rest, but Mrs.
Kaew still insists on
wait.

"Leave it to me, Moddaeng! I'll handle this myself!"

"Hello, Mrs. Rose."

"Madam Kaew, if it's something work-related, you can leave it to me. I'll let
P'Din know. She's resting right now, so it wouldn't be convenient for
her to discuss work."

Machine Translated by Google

"It's okay, Mrs. Rose. Since I'm free today, I'll wait until she wakes up."

"But we don't know exactly when she'll wake up."

"No problem. I can wait until tonight if necessary. My house is right there, very close by."

Tippapha glanced at Moddaeng, who seemed to be urging her with all her might to show her position as wife number one. Moddaeng probably realized, as she did, how insistent and resistant Madam Kaew was.

In fact, any normal person would have already retreated when faced with such an answer, but Madam Kaew seemed willing to stay no matter what was said.
How could she politely kick her out? The only remaining solution would be for her and Moddaeng to literally carry and throw the woman out of the house. However, if they did that, it would certainly cause a scandal.

Even though P'Din liked her very much, if she acted rudely, she would probably get a scolding.

She wasn't willing to lose her mind to someone she didn't trust at all!

"Can I speak to P'Din privately about work?"

"P'Din, then I'll wait outside. When I'm done talking about work, tell Mrs. Kaew to call me, so I can bring you dinner."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't worry, Rose. Stay here with me, you don't have to go anywhere."

"But what I'm going to talk to you about is something important, which you asked me to investigate."

"Kaew, I have no secrets from my wife."

"..."

Kasama made it clear that Tippapha did not need to move from where she was. Otherwise, if her wife became upset or upset with Mrs. Kaew, she did not want there to be any more misunderstandings, especially with her body still recovering. If her wife were to get really angry, she would not be able to run after her to apologize, since even standing up and walking was still painful.

"What is it, Kaew? What did you want to tell me?"

"Kaew thinks that... she's not sure yet. Let her be sure and then she'll report to P'Din again."

"You can tell me, otherwise you'll have come here for nothing today."

"Don't worry, anyway, I brought the documents for you to sign."

"Thank you, Kaew."

"So, I'll be leaving now, okay? Bye, P'Din, Mrs. Rose."

Tippapha watched as Madam Kaew left without waiting for her to follow. Although her words sounded understanding, she was not really being sincere. Letting Madam Kaew into P'Din's room was uncomfortable for Tippapha, especially with P'Din

Machine Translated by Google

not wanting to go out to speak in the workroom. If P'Din had not stopped her, Tippapha would have retreated with her bag and baggage to another place and become upset.

"Rose."

"Yes?"

"Come closer to me, please. I can't come to you."

"What is it, P'Din?"

"Sit here next to me. I have something to talk about."

Kasama looked at her beloved, who came over and sat next to her on the bed after hearing the light invitation.
However, Tippapha's face was cutely sullen, as if she wasn't trying, but it still looked charming to her. She couldn't help but give her cheek a light pinch, before being looked at with a confused look that she probably wouldn't understand.

"You're so cute."

"I'm trying to control my own frustration, I don't see how this can be cute."

"Even if I have to say it a million times, I'll tell you, Rose, that there's nothing between me and Kaew."

"I know, P'Din. I believe what you say, but my heart aches. Whenever I see Mrs. Kaew approaching you, I can't help but feel like this.

I don't know why, but I don't like myself for it."

"But I like it, I like it a lot."

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha looked at his wife as she gently caressed his cheek with her fingertips, before switching to a more careful and gentle touch as she continued to complain and complain. P'Din must have been lovely and very patient to be able to listen to her complaints without interrupting her.

"You don't have to be so sweet. I know you're disappointed in me for not being able to control my own feelings. I didn't mean to get mad. P'Din got out of the hospital, and I planned a celebration, but it was all ruined because of my nonsense with Mrs. Kaew."

"If you can't solve it yourself, would you like me to help you?"

"Does P'Din have a solution?"

"I think so."

"What solution is that? I think now, not even an elephant could stop me..."

"I love you, Rose."

"..."

"I love you the same way you told me you love me."

P'Din was a cheater! At the very least, if she said "I love you", she should have expected Rose to respond with "I love you too", so that Rose would know that she was completely conscious and completely in her right mind. But before Rose could even open her mouth to say "I love you too", P'Din's lips kissed her in the same spot, softly and gently,

Machine Translated by Google

which made her heart melt and break at the touch.

It was such a careful kiss, as if she were her wife, slow and tender, and although the first touch was something new and different, there was no rush. When she finally managed to focus and react according to her feelings and desires.

Rose didn't know what a kiss should be like.

But she would kiss P'Din her way...

"Ahh, Rose!"

"Ah, P'Din! I'm sorry, I didn't mean to do that!"

Tippapha complained, blushing deeply as she pulled away from the first exciting kiss, which had felt so good that her hands and feet were restless. She began to press on P'Din's clothes, even unintentionally pressing right next to her surgery area.

How lucky she was not to have opened her wound!

"Don't worry. Now, Rose, are you feeling better?"

"Yes, it looks like your solution worked."

"So next time you get jealous, I'll use this solution."

"..."

So from now on, Rose will be jealous of the wind, the cats and dogs, the trees and leaves, everything! Let's see!

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 14

Two flowers close to the ground.

“Kaew, greet Mr. Kasidit, daughter. And this is his daughter, Khun Din.”

“Hello, Khun Kasidit. Hello, Khun Din.”

Machine Translated by Google

The first time she met Mr. Kasidit and Khun Kasama, Kaew remembers well. She was 16, in high school, and it was her first time visiting Saenrak Farm, where her father worked. Normally, she lived with her aunt in Chiang Mai, her father's sister, who helped her with her studies while her father paid the expenses. Her mother, she knew, had divorced her father when she was still a child, and later remarried, with no further contact with her daughter.

Now, she had to move permanently to Saenrak Farm after her aunt passed away in an unexpected accident. Her father then asked Mr. Kasidit to kindly let his daughter live with him. The farm owner, a kind and generous person, readily agreed, saying that he would help pay for her education, just as he did for other children of farm workers who wanted to study and get a higher education.

"Kaew, you're Kaew, aren't you? You can consider Saenrak Farm your home now."

"Thank you very much. Mr. Kasidit's kindness is something my father and I will never forget. I will help with the farm work to repay him."

"That's not necessary. I heard your father mentioned that you're good at studying, right? So, study hard. Who knows, maybe you can pass the entrance exam and study at the same university as Din."

"If you need help, you can ask. Your father said that Uncle Kla's daughter is the same age as me. So, you can consider me your friend here."

Machine Translated by Google

“I, I don’t think I’m worthy of being Khun Din’s friend. I’m the daughter of a worker, and Khun Din is the daughter of the owner.”

“To be friends, do we have to know who the father is, Kaew? I don’t think so.

I consider you my friend. What about you? Would you like to be my friend?”

“Yes, I would like to be friends with Khun Din.”

She wanted to be friends with Khun Din, who had always treated her with a bright smile and a kind manner since their first meeting, without appearing proud or distant. And throughout the time they had been friends, Khun Din had never shown any barrier or difference in status, as if she were just a worker's daughter, while Khun Din was the daughter of the farm owner.

She was both a friend and a trusted assistant to Khun Din, someone whom Khun Din herself trusted, and had been by her side at all times. She was fortunate enough to be able to study at the same university as Khun Din, go out together to have fun, help with the work at Saenrak Farm, and be by Khun Din's side like a shadow.

As a constant presence by Khun Din’s side since he lost his father, Kasidit, Khun Din never thought of opening her heart to anyone else or replacing him after this great loss. But in the darkest moments of Khun Din’s life, when she looked around, she would always find her there, as if she were secretly watching Khun Din.

Machine Translated by Google

for over ten years, since they were 16 years old. Time passed and the two were now in their early twenties years.

The first major change in Khun Din's life that made the happiness and smile of the old Khun Kasama disappear was the departure of her father, Kasidit. After that, Khun Din, the person she had always secretly watched, completely changed. But despite all this, she never thought of moving away or abandoning Khun Din, and still wished to be by his side until the day Khun Din finally looked at her.

Because Khun Din was the whole world to her...

She had always believed that their closeness and time together could give her the opportunity she had been waiting for. But when another big change came into Khun Din's life, bringing back the joys that had been lost, instead of being happy to see Khun Din back to his former vibrant and happy self, she felt an almost unbearable pain, because Khun Din's happiness was with someone else, not her!

"I can't believe you, Khun Kaew, are so generous as to agree to be the master of ceremonies for Din's wedding. You always leave me speechless with so many amazing things about you."

"Khun Wasu?"

At the wedding of Khun Kasama and Khun Tippapha, Khun Din asked her to be the master of ceremonies for the event,

Machine Translated by Google

and she accepted without hesitation. Although she secretly held the pain in her heart, seeing the person who had always been by her side follow a path that did not include her, but another woman. She chose to endure this painful feeling, in exchange for continuing to be by the side of the one she loved as a close friend.

"This supporting role doesn't suit you, Khun Kaew. It's like me, who could never adapt to the role of a supporting character, and would just let Din take Rose without doing anything about it."

"Because I'm not like you, Khun Wasu. I'm someone who accepts the truth..."

"Ah, Khun Kaew, you're just fooling yourself. But how long will you continue to fool yourself, saying that you don't feel anything, even though you saw Din marry another woman, while you took care of her for so long? Is she stupid or is she pretending to be stupid so she doesn't realize that you love her?"

"Stop saying that, Khun Wasu!"

Even though this was a private place and no one could hear their conversation, the other side kept firing words, as if he was waging psychological warfare on her. Khun Wasu knew exactly how she felt about her boss, after she had avoided him back in college when he had tried to appear interested in her just for fun, wanting to take her away from Khun Kasama.

But his wealth and appearance, which attracted so many women, were not enough to win her heart.

Machine Translated by Google

"If you don't want to lose Din, then join me. I guarantee that you'll get her back, and I'll get Rose back as well. It'll be a win-win. Think about it, Khun Kaew. I'll be waiting for your contact."

She did not contact Wasu or the Mahatthanakorn immediately after receiving the proposal and simply let the matter pass, as if she did not want to burden her mind with it. She continued to act the same way, working with Khun Din and taking care of her as she always had. However, the person who started to change was not her, but Khun Tippapha, who showed displeasure every time she was around Khun Din, even though Khun Tippapha already had everything: the title of lady of the “Saenrak” farm and Khun Din by her side. Why did she need to bother him any further?

Perhaps the phrase "it's okay", which she repeated to herself millions of times, had reached the breaking point, causing her to lose her patience.

Because after Khun Tippapha stopped her from going to Chiang Mai with Khun Din, it was on that day that she contacted Khun Wasu and agreed to collaborate to achieve both of their goals. The flower of "Kaew", which means...

kindness and purity, has changed so much, all because of one only word: ***love!***

Machine Translated by Google

“Kaew, what are you doing here?”

“Nothing. I was just about to leave.”

“But Moddaeng saw you secretly looking into Khun Din’s room with Khun Rose,
didn’t she?”

“Moddaeng must have made a mistake. I was just handing over some documents, that’s all.”

"But…"

Kaew did not give Khun Tippapha’s employees a chance to continue their accusation. She quickened her pace and quickly left the area, as fortunately Moddaeng, who had just passed by, did not see her clearly.
Otherwise, she would have caught her spying on their private moment in the room, through the crack in the door that Kaew had purposely left ajar when she left. And Kaew had witnessed the painful scene that she didn't want to see, including the conversation where Khun Din clearly chose to protect Khun Tippapha.

It was as if Khun Din had never chosen Kaew...

The person with the calm expression returned to her own home, which was not far from the farm owner’s main house. She opened the drawer, took out a photo of herself with Khun Din, and stared at it with mixed emotions.
Before Khun Tippapha came to Saenrak Farm, everything was better for her. She was someone Khun Din cared about, worried about. Even if there was no love, he never ignored her as if she was unimportant.

Machine Translated by Google

But now, everything had completely changed!

“Hello, Khun Wasu.”

[Khun Kaew, I was waiting for you to decide when you would make your choice.]

“I'm ready to act now. It'll all be over soon!”

[Great. I'm tired of wasting time playing with them too.]

“Actually, Khun Rose, why would Moddaeng make up something to deceive you?”

“Well, it doesn’t make sense, Moddaeng. Yesterday I saw with my own eyes that Kaew had already left.”

“Ah, but Moddaeng saw with her own eyes that Kaew was standing there making a strange face and peeking near the door to Khun Din’s room. I don’t know what she saw, maybe she saw Khun Din and Khun Rose...”

“Don’t be ridiculous, Moddaeng!”

“What? I didn’t say anything about what I saw. This isn’t a sign that Khun Rose is nervous, is it?”

Yes, she was nervous, because anything anyone said made her think of Khun Din’s warm kiss, and she couldn’t stop dreaming about it. Even after everything had calmed down yesterday, and the storm of jealousy had been driven away with Khun Din’s cunning, she still couldn’t look at Khun Din’s lips when she was eating without feeling uncomfortable, even though

Machine Translated by Google

the previous night had been peaceful, with both of them just sleeping in each other's arms.

“I won’t waste time talking about this. I’d better go visit Dad. I have to go back to take care of Khun Din.”

Khun Tippapha cut short the conversation and hurried to leave, with Moddaeng
hurrying behind her. After that day, Khun Tippapha left Saenrak Farm accompanied by two
security guards sent by Khun Wayo, who were temporarily in charge of her while another group took care of security at the farm. Since Khun Wayo had something important to do, he could not continue to look after her personally, but he instructed her not to go out alone during this time.

“Mr. Thip, Rose came to visit you.”

“Ro...se?”

“Daddy, did you call my name? You remember me, don’t you?”

"Yes."

Rose's serene expression lit up with a big smile of happiness when she saw that her father had responded, squeezing her hand and trying to call her name, albeit incompletely. The doctor who was treating him said that his recovery was going well and that, with more physical therapy, he would soon be much better.

“Rose is very happy. I missed you, Daddy.”

"Kaew, what are you doing?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Khun Din!"

"I asked what are you doing?"

"Well... I was going to get some information I need, but Aunt Chan told me you were resting, so I didn't want to wake you up."

"If it's something important, you can wake me up, Kaew. No need to worry."

Kasama walked over to the work desk, seeing Kaew sitting there, focused on her laptop. When she walked in and saw her so focused, she quickly got up to help since Kaew hadn't fully recovered yet, but she kindly declined and went to sit down by herself.

"Kaew, what file do you need? I can email it to you."

"Suwan's order history file, Khun Din. I saw it was something simple and didn't tell you, but... you changed the password, right? I tried the old one, but I couldn't access it."

"Yes, I just changed the password recently, for security reasons."

"You're always so careful, Khun Din."

"I'm just being cautious because I don't know who's involved in this yet."

There is a chance that someone on the team or even someone close to them, like Kaew, could be an informant for one of the big businessmen. For safety reasons, Kasama preferred not to trust anyone except his family and himself.
same.

Machine Translated by Google

"That's what you told me last time, right?"

"Kaew, did you manage to find out anything?"

"Maybe a worker named Manop, who started recently. I'm investigating and keeping an eye on him. Don't worry, Khun Din."

"I'm counting on you, Kaew. I know you'll do it.

everything to protect the interests of the Treasury

Saenrak." "Of course, Khun Din."

"I sent the file to your email."

"Thank you, Khun Din. I'll take care of it right away."

Kaew, with her serene face, looked at the person nearby who seemed like she was going to walk away, but then she seemed to remember something important and looked back, asking a question.

"By the way, where is everyone today? I didn't see Khun Lom, Khun Rose, or

Moddaeng."

"Khun Rose went to visit her father in the hospital with Moddaeng, and Lom came back after finishing what he was doing. She said he was called away for an urgent case, so he might not be available for a while until everything is sorted out."

"What about the important client meeting in Chiang Mai on Saturday? Will you be able to make it, Khun Din? Or would you rather I ask for a postponement? I think the client would understand."

"No need to delay, Kaew. I can make it. But you'll have to drive for me, both there and back."

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, Khun Din. That won't be a problem."

"P'Din, can't you cancel the work in Chiang Mai tomorrow and go later? It would be better to meet the client later. With this complicated situation, Rose is worried."

"I can't, Rose. This job is important, and the client has already rescheduled once. If I postpone it again, the important people waiting for us probably won't be happy."

"But I'm afraid that bandits will try to attack P'Din during the journey. And besides, P'Din's wound has just healed."

She really didn't understand what P'Din was thinking when he decided to travel to Chiang Mai to work with Kaew when the big businessmen were waiting for an opportunity to act. Rose was afraid that P'Din wouldn't be as lucky as the last time when the bullet missed a vital organ, and she didn't want her to get hurt again.

"The client assured me that he will be careful. Besides, I won't be going alone with Kaew, there's Lom and two security guards following and taking care of me. I'll be safe."

"So, can I go with you to Chiang Mai too?"

"No, Rose. Staying on the farm is safer for you.
So P'Din doesn't need to worry about you either."

"But..."

Machine Translated by Google

"Rose, trust me, please. I love you, and you told me you love me too. Because we love each other, we need to trust each other."

Tippapha hugged P'Din tightly and affectionately, feeling safe in his arms. After she explained everything calmly and patiently, as they always do when they talk openly since they started to really get involved as a couple, she felt warmed by the hug and believed in her even more.

"Yes, P'Din. I trust you."

"What Mister Wasu's subordinates need to do is make sure that those who are watching us, like me and P'Din, stay out of range, so that the security guards sent by Lieutenant Wayo won't be able to follow us.

After that, I'll have the opportunity to continue with the plan. I'll use P'Din as bait to lure Tippapha into the trap. After that, when I hand her over to you, Wasu, you can do whatever you want with her!"

"Kaew, are you sure this plan will work?
Tomorrow, will I really be able to get Rose back?"

"Now is the best opportunity to take the risk, because Lieutenant Wayo is not at the farm. Only her subordinates are there, and I believe that Sir Wasu's subordinates are skilled enough to handle this. If they don't make any mistakes, I can guarantee that my plan will not fail."

Machine Translated by Google

"Then, let's go with this plan. I'll send my best subordinates to deal with the officer's men who are intruding. Afterwards, you can do whatever you want with P'Din, in exchange for Rose being mine."

I've already said, when we work together, everything becomes much easier!

"P'Din, can I stop at the gas station for a moment?
I would like some coffee so I don't get sleepy during the long journey."

"Sure, Kaew. Take the money. Buy some for Lom's subordinates too."

"You can wait here, P'Din."

Kasama nodded in agreement after she left the farm. Kaew asked to stop at the gas station, and in the meantime, the farm car also stopped behind. She asked one of her acquaintances to buy coffee since they had another hour of travel ahead of them.

"Your favorite black coffee, P'Din. I bought one for you."

"I'm not driving, so if I get tired, it's okay, Kaew." "If P'Din doesn't drink, I'll be sad.

Here, I'll take the leftover coffee over there first, okay?"

Afraid that Kaew would be disappointed that she had bought the coffee, she began to drink what was given to her.
Meanwhile, Kaew went to take two coffees to Wayo's subordinates and returned to continue the journey.

Machine Translated by Google

"How are you, P'Din? Are you feeling refreshing after drinking?"

"It is good."

Kaew smiled at her boss, who initially refused to drink the coffee, but in the end, he seemed to enjoy the coffee she knew he loved. He seemed to be in a good mood, drinking almost half the cup, more than she had.

I was waiting.

"Kaew, slow down a bit. I'm suddenly starting to feel dizzy."

"P'Din, are you carsick?"

"No, I don't usually get sick."

"Then, P'Din can get some sleep. When we arrive, I'll wake you up."

"Mmm."

There was only a faint sound of response from the person who seemed to be fighting the sleepiness caused by the medicine mixed into the coffee. The two coffees she had prepared for Wayo's subordinates might have also had an effect.
Or, if the first plan failed, Wasu's subordinates would probably follow the next step of the plan. Thus, she purposely accelerated the car to lose the other vehicle behind her, and everything became easier when the car of Wasu's subordinates, which was waiting on the road, cut in and blocked the chase.

"Get some sleep, P'Din. From now on, there are many fun things waiting for us!"

Machine Translated by Google

"Is this weird?"

"What's strange, Rose?" "It's P'Din!

Why doesn't she read or respond to the messages I sent? I don't know what's going on."

"You were only away for a moment, are you already missing P'Din?" "This is no time for talk, Moddaeng. The situation right now is not safe, you know that. I worry about P'Din a lot."

"If you care so much about P'Din, you should call her, Rose. Maybe she hasn't seen the message yet."

Tippapha looked at Moddaeng, who was encouraging her to call her wife instead of sitting around waiting for an answer. At first, she didn't want to call and cause trouble or seem possessive, because she knew P'Din was traveling with Kaew. Besides, she had already promised Din that she would trust her, the one she loved the most. But as much as she trusted him, she couldn't help but worry.

"Moddaeng, P'Din didn't answer."

"It's really weird, yeah. She didn't read the message, she didn't reply, and you called and she didn't answer either."

"I'm worried, Moddaeng. What do I do?"

"Calm down, Rose. I'll try calling Kaew again. Ah, Kaew didn't answer either. Or maybe you want to try calling the Lom men who went with them?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Then, Moddaeng, try calling Kaew until she answers. I'll get the number of Lom's subordinates that P'Din wrote down in the office."

The farm owner hurriedly moved away from Moddaeng, as she remembered that P'Din's notebook in the office contained the numbers of important contacts in case of emergencies. Even though she had written them down on her phone, she had also recorded them separately just in case. Before she could call Wayo's subordinates, P'Din's number came ringing. She quickly answered it, urgently.

"P'Din, did something happen? Why didn't you answer my calls?"

[Were you that worried?]

"Kaew!"

[Yes, it's me. I'm glad to hear your voice, Rose, it still reminds me of myself.]

"Why did you use P'Din's cell phone to call me? Where is P'Din? Why did she let you call me instead of her? Go get P'Din now and talk to her!"

[Rose! Who do you think is giving orders here? Don't forget that I am P'Din's subordinate. Therefore, the only person whose orders I will follow are hers.]

"Kaew, what's going on?"

[I just want to say that you can stop trying to boss me around. Stop being so important, you idiot, Rose!]

"..."

Machine Translated by Google

The owner of the pretty face raised her hand and covered her mouth in surprise, not knowing what to say when she heard the aggressive and harsh tone of P'Din's assistant on the other end of the line. Kaew was usually a smiling and sociable person, who seemed kind and sweet, so she never imagined that the other person could have such an aggressive side that was so far from her expectations. It was as if Kaew was suddenly showing a side of herself that she had never seen before.

[But don't worry about P'Din, because being with me now, she's safer than risking her life to protect a problem like you.]

"Bullshit! P'Din would never be with you!"

[You don't believe the truth, do you? Or are you pretending not to believe because you don't want to accept reality?]

"Yes, because I trust P'Din, I trust the person I love!"

Because P'Din said she loves me more than anything, I can't fall for Kaew's game, who doesn't know what she wants or what she's trying to do. What I need to do is stay calm and not fall for the provocations about something impossible.
I will trust P'Din until the last second and will not create any more trouble for her.

[Love? Rose, let me tell you something, as a favor. If P'Din really loved you, she wouldn't have chosen to be happy with someone like me, hiding from you, now.]

"What!"

[The truth is, the whole Chiang Mai job thing was just an excuse. Whenever I went out with P'Din, while you were just standing there waiting like an idiot, I

Machine Translated by Google

I'll tell you as a favor: P'Din and I were always happy together. We were happy before you came into her life and we're still happy now.]

"..."

[Or, if you are still trying to close your eyes and not accept the truth, look at the evidence I sent you and stop deceiving yourself!]

Tippapha was distracted from the call after her chat program received a new message. It was a photo of P'Din that she had sent to Rose. In the image, P'Din was lying next to Kaew, cuddling her on a bed somewhere she didn't recognize. And Kaew, probably afraid that she wouldn't be easily convinced by the photo, sent her a video as well. The video showed P'Din lying on the bed, with Kaew caressing her face with an adoring expression, until the image cut out.

"Kaew! Don't do anything to P'Din, stop now!"

[The person you should stop from doing something is me, not P'Din. Well... we're just happy together, like we always have been. Before, you never knew, so keep ignoring it and pretending you don't know!]

"I don't believe it! P'Din would never betray me, she wouldn't be dishonest with me."

[If you don't believe it, come see for yourself!]

The person on the other end hung up the call and immediately turned off the phone after sending the last location. She was unable to return the call. Tippapha then looked closely at the hotel location, which

Machine Translated by Google

It wasn't too far from Saenrak Farm. Although it was a trap, this time she would have to take the risk.

Because she had to protect P'Din and not allow the person she loved to be taken away from her by anyone else!

"Where are you going, Rose? Now is not the time, P'Din said you should never go out alone."

"Moddaeng, don't stop me! I'm going out to help P'Din!"

"What happened, Rose? What happened to P'Din?"

"I don't have time, Moddaeng! Get in the car, I'll explain later."

"But Rose, you can't go out alone! At least let the people in your group follow you! Ah!"

Before she could reach the destination she had been told, a cargo truck suddenly approached and blocked the road, even though she and Moddaeng had just left Saenrak Farm. When she tried to reverse, another car appeared behind, blocking the route and surrounding her, as if intentionally, to prevent her from escaping the area.

"Get out of the car!"

"Who are you? Don't do anything to Rose! Let go of Rose... ahhh!"

Machine Translated by Google

Moddaeng screamed for help in desperation as several armed men approached the car, opened the door and dragged Rose, who was in the

driver's seat, out. They arrested her and prevented her from going to help her boss.

"We've got her. What do we do now?"

Tippapha stared at Moddaeng, who was trying unsuccessfully to free herself, while she was also being held under guard by two of the criminals. One of the bandits made a call and then hung up, giving orders to the others.

"The boss said to tell you to bring her to him as soon as possible!"

"You, P'Din."

Kaew spoke in a soft voice as she ran her palm over the face of her boss, whom she had secretly loved for over ten years. She had fallen in love with P'Din when she was only sixteen, and had kept her love a secret ever since, while P'Din had never paid her any attention. But why then did P'Din fall in love and say that he loved her very much, even though someone else had come into his life after her?

"I've been by your side longer than anyone. I love you more than anyone. Why didn't you ever realize?"

Machine Translated by Google

If P'Din had realized sooner that she loved her, or if she had had the courage to confess her feelings before someone else came into her life, maybe she and P'Din would already be together, in love with each other. The only thing she did wrong was not having the courage to declare her love and waiting until it was too late. But it's not too late yet. She will correct all her mistakes and make things between them move forward.

"Khun Wasu, everything is settled. I took Rose out of the picture for you. Your people have already settled everything, right?"

[My men have already caught her. Thank you, Kaew. You did a good job on this mission.]

"Now destroy all evidence. Don't let anyone know I've been in contact with you."

After giving instructions to her temporary ally, with whom she had to unite to achieve a common goal, she felt that what she and P'Din wanted was about to be achieved. She would be the only one to possess the woman she loved, without having to share her with anyone.

"I love you, P'Din."

The words of love she had kept secret were finally revealed, along with the touch she had planned for the person she loved the most. But before his lips touched hers, who was unconscious due to the effect of the drug, her face turned, and Din opened his eyes, staring at her, before saying something that left her in shock, like someone who had suffered a great blow.

"Do you know what is more painful than being hurt by an enemy? It is being betrayed by someone I trusted. Someone

Machine Translated by Google

who I saw as the best friend of my life, and who stabbed me in the back until I was destroyed."

"P'Din!"

"Everything bad you did, Kaew, was for love. Please don't love me anymore."

“...”

"Because your love, Kaew, I don't want it!"

Chapter 15

Plan within a plan and the promise to love.

Machine Translated by Google

“That’s not it, Mrs. Din. You’re misunderstanding me.”

“Enough, Kaew. There’s no point talking now, it’s too late.”

“Everything that happened was because I was deceived and used by Mr. Wasu. He threatened me, forced me. I had no choice and had to pass information to him. Please believe me.”

“The Kaew I knew would never allow anyone to force or bully you. You were always a person who, even in adversity or without options, would never lower your head to cooperate with bad people.”

Kasama pulled away from Kaew's touch, who was desperately trying to hold her, asking for empathy and a chance to explain what no longer seemed justifiable.
Kasama knew the whole truth, because he saw it with his own eyes, heard it with his own ears and put himself in that situation to unmask the real traitor.

“Kaew would never do something so despicable without giving his heartfelt consent.”

“...”

The chief firmly removed her arm from Kaew’s grip, speaking in a cold and resolute voice. More than disappointment in someone she considered a close friend, Kasama was in disbelief at such evil. She would never have believed it if she hadn’t seen it for herself. Even the cautionary advice and suspicions of Apo, Wayo, and Atjima indicated that Kaew was not to be trusted.

Machine Translated by Google

Everything that had happened at Saenrak Farm pointed to Kaew as the prime suspect. Even so, Kasama held out hope until the very last moment that her friend would repent and turn back before it was too late.

But now all your expectations have been shattered!

“I did all this because I love you, Mrs. Din! I love you more than Miss Rose, who just came into your life. But you never realized how much I love you.”

“How could I not see how you feel about me?”

“Mrs. Din!”

“I always knew, from the beginning. But all I did was make my role as your friend clear. I pretended not to know in order to preserve our friendship. That way, you could continue to be by my side as my assistant and friend, without me having to push you away just because you had feelings for me.”

“...”

"In this case, I think it was my fault for wanting to spare someone else's feelings.

Kaew as a friend. If I had known that everything would end like this, I would have made it clear from the beginning that there could never be anything between us other than friendship."

Kasama reflected that she had some blame for never being straightforward with Kaew, prioritizing their long-standing friendship. However, her actions never gave Kaew false hope, and she always made it clear to everyone around her how much she loved Tippapha.

Machine Translated by Google

“How can Mrs. Din love Tippapha? You’ve only just met her. In comparison, I’ve been by her side for more than ten years...”

“If I were to love Kaew like I love a partner, I wouldn’t need ten years to do it.”

“It can’t be true...”

“But since I don’t love Kaew that way, even if another ten years pass, or even more than that, I will never feel anything more than friendship for Kaew. I will never love Kaew the way I love Miss Rose.”

Perhaps being physically hurt by the woman she loved, amidst her frustration and anger at his evil actions, was less painful than hearing the truth directly from the one she had loved for so long. Knowing that she would never love her, while declaring her love for someone else, made each word sink deep into Kaew's shattered heart.

Tears began to flow, painful and impossible to contain. Kaew collapsed, kneeling on the floor without the strength to get up. Her sobs and cries of anguish echoed through the room, but no matter how much she cried, no one who had once considered her a friend would ever trust her or comfort her again.

Kaew knew she had made a mistake. She had chosen the wrong path and lost herself in it with no way back. When she realized how much she had done wrong, the space next to Din was no longer meant for someone like her.

“P'Din, is everything okay?”

“I'm fine, Lom.”

Machine Translated by Google

After everything was over, with Kaew's defeat and collapse, Lieutenant Wayo, who had been following the tracker hidden in the car, arrived at the scene with two subordinates. It was all part of a plan to trick Kaew into believing that Din would fall into her trap. Once she revealed herself, there was no escape.

“Take the suspect to the police station.”

"Yes sir."

“I am sure Kaew will face several charges, including kidnapping and false imprisonment. And then there is the collaboration with the Mahattanakorn...”

“Lom, let Kaew go.”

“Wait, P’Din! But she committed crimes. If we hadn’t planned against her, you might have been deceived.”

“I don’t want to go through with this anymore. What’s done is done.”

“But I don’t agree with that, P’Din. If Kaew comes back and tries to do something to you or Rose again, we’ll be giving the enemy an opportunity.”

“Kaew wouldn’t do that. I hope that the last chance I’m giving her as a friend will make her reflect and start a new life.”

“Mrs. Din, I’m so sorry. I regret it… Please forgive me.”

“What you did, Kaew, I cannot forgive. But I will not hurt you the way you hurt me, nor the one I love.”

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama stared at Kaew, who kept his eyes on her through a veil of streaming tears. Then Kasama made a decision that Wayo would probably disapprove of, but he respected because he trusted her judgment.

“From now on, Kaew is no longer my friend, and Saenrak Farm is no longer Kaew’s home.”

“You managed to capture her, right?”

“Yes, I captured the owner of the Saenrak farm for Mr. Wasu.”

“Then take her to the room immediately. He is waiting.”

The burly man opened the door to the agreed-upon meeting place, lifted the woman’s unconscious body from the back seat of the car, and carried her to the motel where Mr. Wasu was eagerly awaiting a night of pleasure. He tucked her into bed and, upon completion of the task, received payment from one of Wasu’s subordinates.

“Mr. Wasu, Rose has arrived.”

“Great job. Pay us.”

Wasu’s voice echoed from the bathroom, where he was preparing for an intense night. Although Tippapha was now “used” by Kasama, and not the “untouched” woman he had originally desired, to Wasu, a toy was a toy. He would enjoy her to the fullest before discarding her when she was no longer useful.

Machine Translated by Google

“Have you waited long for me, dear Rose?”

With a smile on his face, he came out of the bathroom wearing only a towel, looking at the sleeping body on the bed. He wanted to imagine Kasama's expression when he found out that his wife had been humiliated by someone superior to her. When Wasu finished having fun, he would return Rose just to mock her.

“What a delicious smell...”

Wasu brushed his lips and lightly shaved chin against the woman’s shoulder, teasing her. He turned her to face him, overcome with anticipation. But when he saw her face, his desire was instantly shattered. Something had gone wrong.

“Who are you?! Why aren’t you Rose?”

“Ah, but you just said that Moddaeng has a delicious scent, didn’t you, Mr. Wasu?”

“You! Damn Moddaeng! Wretch! You incompetents!
I said bring Rose! How did you capture her maid?! Did you hear? Get in here now and take her out immediately!”

“Do you think that now that you’ve brought Moddaeng here, it will be easy to get rid of her?”

“What madness is this?! Let me go!”

“Help! Police! Help! Moddaeng is under attack!”
Tricked into coming here and being raped! Help!”

“...”

Moddaeng's dramatic performance was award-worthy. She had been assigned to protect Rose,

Machine Translated by Google

ensuring that she didn't have to take the risk personally. And as always, Wayo had trusted the right person.

Moddaeng played his role masterfully, holding Wasu back and creating enough evidence for the police to arrest him on the spot.

“With such clear evidence and witnesses, it will be difficult to get away with this, Mr. Wasu.”

“Damn Wayo! This was all a plan of yours!”

“Take the criminal to the police station and take the victim to give a statement.”

“Mrs. Wayo, Din and Rose are safe, right?”

“Don’t worry. You’re both safe. Moddaeng, you were amazing. Your help was essential.”

“With Moddaeng on the case, there will never be disappointments!”

“P’Din...”

“Rose, are you okay? You weren’t hurt anywhere, right?”

“I’m fine, yes. I’m just worried about you. Please don’t do something so risky like that again. Otherwise, I’ll be really mad.”

“I’m sorry I didn’t tell you sooner. I knew if you knew, you wouldn’t let me go through with the plan.”

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama hugged her beloved affectionately, comforting her after facing such an intense situation together. Rose had risked a lot to expose the true face of her former friend, Kaew, someone she now realized she didn't really know.

At the same time, Tippapha had almost put herself in danger by watching Kaew play. However, she had acted cautiously: when Kaew wasn't looking, she pretended to drink the coffee that contained something suspicious and threw the contents away. Furthermore, Tippapha trusted that Wayo had drawn up a detailed security plan to protect Rose. Thus, she sent Wayo to take care of Rose's safety, while she herself took the risk of dealing directly with Kaew.

Wayo, in turn, positioned his team to intercept Rose as soon as she left the farm, ensuring her safety at the agreed location. They then swapped Rose for Moddaeng, who followed the plan and met Kaew at the previously agreed location. This prevented Kaew from alerting Wasu, who ended up being caught red-handed, with enough evidence to not escape this time.

"That's right, I would never allow P'Din to put himself in danger like that."

"But everything is nearing the end now. I believe that soon all this will be resolved."

"By the way, is Moddaeng okay? I'm really worried about her. She also risked a lot for me."

"Moddaeng is safe. Right now, she is at the police station giving a statement along with Wayo. There is no need to worry. I just spoke to

Machine Translated by Google

Wayo before coming here.”

“What a relief! Knowing that both you and Moddaeng are safe makes me so happy.”

“But what really makes me happiest is that you’re safe, Rose.”

“About Kaew...”

“...”

“P'Din, are you okay?”

Tippapha finally asked about Kaew, whose true identity had been completely exposed. Finding out that Kaew was a traitor who had infiltrated the Saenrak Farm had shaken everyone to their core. Although Tippapha disliked Kaew’s actions, especially her jealousy towards Kasama, she did not hate her and never wanted Kaew to face such a terrible fate. However, Kaew was able to betray Kasama and act with malice towards her in ways she could never have imagined or prepared for.

“Let’s change the subject. I don’t want you to feel bad about this.”

“P'Din, you can talk about it. I want to hear what you have to say.”

have to say about Kaew. Talk to me. I'm not feeling jealous anymore.

I'm asking because I want to hear what's in your heart. I'm worried about you.”

“About Kaew… I am deeply disappointed and very hurt.”

Machine Translated by Google

Kasama openly expressed the weight of feelings she had been carrying alone, after going through a situation that left her deeply disappointed and sad. As she herself had told Kaew, being betrayed by someone she trusted and considered a friend hurt much more than being hurt by someone who had always been clearly an enemy.

“Kaew was like an important friend, almost like part of the family. To be stabbed in the back by someone so close... I think I'll need some time to recover.”

“I’ll be here for you, P’Din. I’ll offer you my shoulder to lean on and my warm embrace whenever you need it. I’ll take care of you, doing my best, until you feel better. Time and I will heal you, okay?”

You are amazing, and I will be by your side.”

As now, Kasama, always so strong, finally allowed herself to rest, resting her head on her loved one's shoulder, accepting the invitation with tenderness. She wrapped Tippapha in a tight hug, while she felt Tippapha's soft hands gently caress her back, as if they were offering comfort and strength on such a heavy and adversity-filled day.

We are truly lucky to love each other and have each other...

Machine Translated by Google

"I'll remember that, Wayo. Do you want to butt in where you're not wanted? When I get out of this accusation, you can be sure I won't leave you alone."

"I don't accept deposits, I'm a police officer, not a warehouse for objects."

"You want to fight me, don't you?"

"Enough causing trouble, Wasu. Do you want more accusations to be leveled against you? Your father doesn't know where to hide his face anymore. How could you be so blind and out of your mind that you kidnapped a farm maid and forced her to be your wife? I never thought you were so stupid and desperate."

"It was all Wayo's plan! I was tricked!"

"How about adding one more charge of slander against

a government agent? It will fit well with the long

list of charges you already have." "Wasu, go back to

home."

Wayo stared at Wasu and his father, Wasupon, who looked at him with a mixture of anger and disappointment. Especially his son, who now no longer made any effort to hide his true colors. During the interrogation, however, Wayo discovered that Wasu did not mention or implicate Kaew, who Din decided to release without taking legal action. Perhaps Wasu still intended to use Kaew in some way in the future.

"Lom, after I finish giving my statement at the police station, can I go see Rose?"

"Not yet. You need to go back to the farm and act like nothing happened today. Not yet

Machine Translated by Google

we know if, besides Kaew, there may be other infiltrators.
If anyone asks about Din and Rose, tell them they're on another honeymoon."

"Okay. I'll say that. And if Aunt Chan or Uncle Kla ask about Kaew, what should I say?"

"Tell them you don't know and to wait to ask Din when she gets back."

At this point, the best option would be for Din and Rose to take refuge in a safe place, making it difficult for the Mahattanakorn family, who were already trying to escape the charges, to find them. This would reduce the chances of foul play or tricks to manipulate the situation.

With the Moddaeng case having solid evidence and witnesses, Wasupon was still able to use his connections to ensure that his son did not spend the night in jail.
As for the other cases, where the evidence wasn't as strong, it was likely that he would find a way to free Wasu.

Unless a key witness or definitive evidence emerged that could corner the Mahattanakorn family.

“Understood, Moddaeng. Thank you for protecting me today.
While I'm here, I'll take good care of myself.
You also take care of yourself while you wait for me to return.”

Tippapha gratefully accepted her faithful friend's concern and thanked her for her protection. After receiving a call from Moddaeng, who reported that he had returned to

Machine Translated by Google

Once she was safely at Saenrak Farm with Wayo, she finally felt at ease. With her mind at ease, Tippapha was able to close her eyes and rest, knowing that the difficult situations were at least partly resolved.

Even though Kaew’s issue had been cleared up and the situation had calmed down, and even though she had comforted Din until she felt better, why did she suddenly feel uneasy herself? The reason came when, on impulse, she opened Din’s chat and saw disturbing photos and a video that she hadn’t yet had the chance to question.

It seemed like the spirit of “Din’s number one wife” had taken over her again!

“Rose, what are you doing?”

“Don’t come any closer, Din!”

“Why can’t I hug you?”

“Stay away from me, don’t come near me.”

Kasama looked at her beloved, who seemed to be in a bad mood and acting irritably as she was hugged from behind. After separating to take a shower and change clothes —
provided by Wayo at the temporary shelter—Din hadn't expected to find her like this. Before, Rose had seemed calm, gently comforting him until she felt better and forgot about the recent hardships.

But what could have happened in such a short time for her to change her behavior?

“But tonight I want to hug Rose. Are you sure you won’t let me?”

Machine Translated by Google

“You can keep trying to convince me, Din. I won’t give in.”

“Why are you being so cruel to me?”

“I’m not being cruel. I just don’t want to step in someone else’s footsteps.”

"What?"

“Even if it was a plan, Din liked it, didn’t he? He liked getting her so close like that.”

Afraid that Din wouldn't understand her hints, Tippapha took the phone with the chat screen open and put it in her hands, with an angry expression. There were the photos sent by Kaew, accompanied by a video. Kasama watched the video until the end and, when she looked at her beloved again, she was staring at her angrily, as if she could finish her off with just a look.

“Rose trusted Din completely, but in the video you don’t seem trustworthy at all.”

“I can explain!”

“Then explain! Oh, but before you start, know that you already gave yourself away by telling me that you didn’t drink the coffee with the sleeping pill that Kaew prepared. You said you threw it away.” This means that in all the images and video, you were conscious and just pretending to be asleep.”

“...”

Rose isn't a cop like Wayo, but she seems to be even better at investigations. She cornered Din with clear arguments, leaving her almost speechless.
Despite the seriousness, his way of acting still had a

Machine Translated by Google

A lovely touch, which made Din contain a smile of admiration so as not to lose focus on the moment.

“That’s right. I was aware of everything Kaew did.
I pretended to go along with the game in order to get
evidence that would completely incriminate her. If I had resisted from
the beginning, Kaew would never have revealed that she was
collaborating with Wasu.”

“So you let her hug and cuddle you just for that?”

“Just hugs and touches. No kisses happened, I can assure you.”

“Oh, but try letting her kiss you! If you dare go that far, Din, you can bet I’ll finish you off!”

Just the hugs and touches were already making Rose boil with anger, almost blowing smoke from her ears. If Kaew had kissed Din, Rose would certainly have exploded and become furious, perhaps not forgiving her so easily for something so reckless and disrespectful to the love Din claimed to feel for her.
she.

“That will never happen. I don’t allow anyone to kiss me except you, Rose.”

“What Kaew did to your body, I will erase it all now!”

“What? Rose...”

Kasama was surprised when Tippapha unexpectedly climbed onto her lap, wrapping her arms around her neck. The pose was seductive and provocative, catching Din completely off guard. Before he could say anything else, Rose's soft, possessive lips landed on his in a kiss.

Machine Translated by Google

marked by impatience and jealousy. Din just reciprocated with a touch of affection and amusement, enchanted by his beloved's jealous side.

"Stop! You can't kiss me now, Din, because you're still being punished."

"Rose..."

"I'm the only one who can do everything: hug, kiss, caress... or even explore with my hands."

She wouldn’t let any part of her body that Kaew had touched go unpunished. Just like now, her hands were gliding provocatively over Din’s face. If, in the video, Kaew was being seductive at 10%, Rose would show her sensuality at 100%, leaving Kaew completely behind.

It was time to make it clear that Rose was the real number one!

"Why are you biting your lips, Din? Is this punishment too much for you?"

"Yes, I surrender."

"Why did you give up so easily? That way, playing with you loses its fun."

"I surrender to you in everything, Rose."

"Do you want me to feel sorry for you?"

"Yes."

Don't give her that sweet, begging look, Kasama! Or are you trying to make her give in this time? Rose was already soft-hearted, and even more so when it came to

Machine Translated by Google

someone she loved as much as Din. How long could she keep up the hard game?

"Okay, I'll consider it your first mistake. Rose will give you a chance and forgive you."

"Does that mean the punishment has been canceled as well?"

"Yeah, I'll let you do whatever you want... Ouch! Din!"

Tippapha let out a cry of surprise when Din suddenly turned the tables, causing her to lose her balance and end up lying on the bed. In an instant, Din was on top of her, supporting his weight with his arms at her sides. The scene was almost identical to that night when Din had come back drunk, but this time, she wasn't drunk on alcohol.

Din could only be drunk with love for Rose!

"Can I kiss you now?"

"I already said I forgive you, do what you want..."

Tippapha responded in a shy but determined tone, looking away because she didn't have the courage to look Din directly in the eye, fearing that she would lose even more control over herself.

At this moment, if Moddaeng knew, she would probably say that she was an easy-going woman who always pleased her lover. But since Moddaeng didn’t know, she couldn’t make fun of her later. There wasn’t much she could do, since she loved Din’s warm touch and kiss. From the first time she received it, she was so enchanted that she wanted more, never getting tired.

But, as she said, Din was a caring person who treated her with a lot of respect. In addition to the first kiss,

Machine Translated by Google

Not counting the one she stole earlier to erase the marks, this was also a kiss that both of them gave each other with intention, and it was much more passionate than the first time.

It seems that the kiss was not restricted to the same place, as Din chose to spread his kisses all over her, creating an overwhelming and burning sensation that made her shiver. He kissed her neck so that she arched her head, allowing him to follow, as if he were taking advantage of her. Deep down, she knew that the one being deceived and used in the plan was Moddaeng, not her, so why did Din need to erase the marks on her?

But no! Din wasn't erasing the marks, but creating new love marks on her body, driven by desire and emotion that made her let out muffled sounds of protest, as if she couldn't hide it anymore. It seemed that Din was taking revenge on her, making the punishment she had given him before seem like a childish joke compared to what was happening now.

No, Din was not a simple person! She was nothing like what she and Moddaeng had imagined!

"Ah! Din!"

"Rose, does it hurt?"

"Are you a mosquito, Din? Are you biting my neck?"

"It was just a kiss."

"You overdid it! Just a little affection and you're already like this?"

"Sorry, I won't do it again."

Kasama apologized with a regretful tone, realizing that he had gone too far with Rose. Everything

Machine Translated by Google

had started with an attempt to provoke her, breaking her patience because of Tippapha's teasing jokes. But fortunately, Rose used her hand to pat her shoulder, getting her attention and reprimanding her. If it weren't for that, she could have taken advantage of the situation.

"What?"

"Rose, rest. Have sweet dreams."

"Din, are you really going to sleep? Aren't you going to take responsibility for what you did?"

"I just don't think it's right."

Even though she loved her and was completely in love with her, she needed to learn to control her feelings and do things properly. She should respect her wife as Mr. Thipakorn believed in her.
Even though it was hard to resist, as Tippapha's sweetness was never kind to her, she needed to learn to control her feelings until the right day came.

"When Mr. Thipakorn gets out of the hospital, I will seriously ask for your hand, Rose."

"Are you going to ask my father for my hand?"

"Yes, and I will take over our responsibilities starting tonight."

Din was crazy! She said that and just drifted off to sleep, as if nothing had happened. How could Rose fall asleep in Din's arms tonight? See?
At this moment, his heart was beating fast and hard, almost exploding with emotion.

But Din's heart, which Rose could also hear?

Machine Translated by Google

It seemed to be beating faster and harder, as if it didn't want to be outdone.

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 16

If frustration equals defeat.

Starting a new day after going through yesterday's hectic events, including the opportunity to clear up a misunderstanding with Tippapha about something that made her very angry. Now, we have a smooth understanding again, and we are hugging each other, meeting each other like the first people upon waking up.

Come to think of it, even if there are problems or trials ahead in our lives, she and the person she loves will have to overcome everything. Those who make mistakes should be punished according to the law. Those responsible should face the consequences of their actions. At least the fact that they are serving time in prison will help prevent the father and son from causing more trouble to innocent people.

She hopes to receive a good response from Wayo and hopes that the lieutenant, who is very competent, is resolving the situation. If it weren't for Wayo and the other members of the Watinwanich family, such as Apo and Atjima, who are always ready to help, she thinks she would feel lost and unable to protect those she loves as she would like.

Machine Translated by Google

She is very lucky to have such a great family and partner...

"P'Din, what are you thinking?"

"Rose, are you awake yet?"

"Yes, I have. I woke up and I'm already dealing with the worry, as always."

Tippapha gently pushed P'Din's head with her fingers, laughing, and P'Din, frowning, smiled softly and calmed his thoughts, before exchanging the gesture for a sweet smile at her. When they woke up, they were together at home, in this new day.

"I was thinking about you, Rose."

"Don't give me those sweet words, you know you don't impress me."

"Good morning my love."

P'Din's love... means her?

The owner of the beautiful face closed her eyes to wait for P'Din's touch, who gently kissed her forehead as a morning greeting, before pulling away and giving her that charming smile that made her melt. P'Din loved to make her heart beat fast, both before sleeping and when waking up, always leaving her speechless.

She says she's not impressed..., but Rose was lying.

"So, what would you like to eat, Rose?"

"P'Din, are you going to cook?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, here it's just the two of us. We don't have Aunt Chan to make something delicious like at home."

"You can cook well too, P'Din. Like the last time you made something for me."

"How about a special menu? Like our first day together."

"No, thank you."

"So, what would you like to eat?"

Kasama asked the owner of the beautiful face, who shook her head, refusing the idea, making a cute face. No matter the time, whether before going to sleep or when waking up, she always looked adorable, without makeup, showing her natural side to the person she loved the most.

"I just wanted to show off my skills in the kitchen. You can wait."

"Will you be able to wait?"

"You'll see! You'll have to settle for whatever food I make, no matter what it is!"

"I was joking, but you're so determined to do anything, even food!"

P'Din's playfulness made Rose smile, and she was always joking with her, but always showing her how much she meant to Din. She fondly remembered the times they spent together, especially the nights they had spent together when they had managed to fall asleep despite the difficulty. Although she didn't feel ready to call herself his number one wife yet, she knew that P'Din was truly amazing!

Machine Translated by Google

"Rest assured, P'Din and I, Rose, will stay here for now. Anyway, P'Din, please take care of Mr. Thip's safety."

"P'Din, the food is already served. Ah, are you still taking care of some matters? Then I'll let you continue and I'll be right back."

No problem, P'Din has already finished talking to Lom.

Kasama responded to his wife and quickly went to help put the food Tippapha had prepared on the dining table. She had prepared something simple and tasty and placed it on a table next to two chairs so they could have breakfast together. The view from the window, with the natural scenery surrounding the house, offered a peaceful and pleasant moment to relax outside the city.

"How's the case with Wasu, P'Din?"

"He's always trying to get away with it, as usual, even with the clear evidence this time."

"No matter what we do, will it be impossible to deal with these evil people? It seems that justice does not exist in this country."

How many times did P'Din have to risk it to protect her? Like Wayo, Apo and Atjima, always reaching out to help with whatever they could. Even her close friends, like Moddaeng, who yesterday put his own life on the line to protect her. Many people were doing everything they could for her, while the guilty ones, like the

Machine Translated by Google

two father and son Mahattanakorn, remained unpunished, still with space in society.

"P'Din believes that justice still exists, yes. At least, now we need to continue collecting evidence and testimonies that may be useful. Because, in all cases, Wasu's sentences are still too light."

"Rose and P'Din haven't done anything wrong, but we have to hide for our safety, while bad people like the Mahattanakorn don't seem to care."

"I know, Rose. I'm also outraged that we can't do anything against the culprits. But right now, we're not hiding out of cowardice. We're waiting for the right moment to act. If the other side is good at getting their hands dirty and using force, my father always told me that we should fight smart."

"If there's anything I can help you with, P'Din, just say the word. I'm here to support you and Lom."

"Now then, Rose, help us have breakfast on time."

Even with the delicate situation, P'Din still cared about her food and invited her to breakfast. She made something simple, like bread with jelly and peanut butter, accompanied by black coffee for her. Since she didn't like coffee very much, she exchanged it for milk for herself.

"P'Din, eat well!"

"P'Din is starving."

"Because last night, we were so scared that we couldn't have dinner."

Machine Translated by Google

"It's weird, isn't it? Why did you forget to eat last night?"

"..."

The truth was that P'Din wasn't hungry for food, but hungry for something else..., but Rose wouldn't say that, wouldn't turn the conversation back to her or make fun of P'Din, who always teased her. She wouldn't say that she was making a fool of herself, leaving her in a funny situation.

"This is so delicious! Rose, you make the best breakfast! When we get back to the farm, you have to make me this more often."

"Oh, you're exaggerating! It's just toasted bread with jam.
If it hadn't turned out well, I would have felt bad. No need to praise it so much."

"This toasted bread with jam is the best I've ever had in my life!"

P'Din spoke and laughed to herself, but Rose thought she was being so cute that she couldn't help but smile.
She took a bite of the jam bread, leaving some jam in her mouth, before giving P'Din a kiss on the cheek, leaving her cheek covered in the jam, as if it were a piece of bread.

When the world seems to have only the two of us... it's so happy that it makes you want to stop time."

Machine Translated by Google

"You, Kaew! How dare you appear here in front of me?"

"We all make mistakes, you told me that yourself.
As for what happened yesterday, it was just a small mistake. It doesn't mean that everything we did together is over."

"You dare say that it was just a small mistake? Do you know what happened to me yesterday? What accusations did I receive? Because of your mistake, Heng Chwai's plan ended with me, I lost everything."

Wasu didn't understand why Kaew, the person who had caused the plan to go wrong, still had the nerve to show up at Nabanan Farm. She should have taken responsibility for her actions, but it seemed like she wasn't as concerned as he was. He could barely sit still due to the scolding he received from his father and was even physically assaulted. The father, Leung Wasupon, was extremely disappointed with the situation and went straight to the only son with the revolver, hitting him in the face as soon as he returned to the farm.

"I suffered consequences too. Din found out I was spying for you, and now they've kicked me out of Saenrak Farm."

"So why did you come to me? Do you think I can help you?"

"I just have nowhere to go..."

"I am now being watched by the police. I will not risk having you, a useless person, around to cause me more problems. I only collaborated with you because you were close to Din and were useful to me, but now that you are no longer of any value, accept it, you are no longer of any use to me. I do not

Machine Translated by Google

I'll give you shelter and then get bitten in the back, like Din was foolish to keep you around."

"So, if I have something useful for you, something that can return the advantage to the Mahattanakorn, would you reconsider and make a new decision?"

"What do you mean by that?"

"I have all the information about the Watinwanich. Don't forget, I am Din's most trusted aide and person, and this information can easily destroy the Saenrak Farm without you having to put in any effort."

"If I pave the way for you to do this, what will you gain, Kaew? Either way, you'll never get Din back."

Wasu asked, trying to test, wanting to understand what Kaew's plan was, this treacherous person who, in his opinion, was not worthy of trust, someone capable of betraying Kasama as he did. But he also knew that they needed to cooperate and trust each other for the benefit of both.

"I don't need Din anymore. The person who disrespected my love will suffer much more than me. I want her life to end, I want her to lose everything. And look, when that happens, will the woman she says she loves, this Rose, continue to be by her side?"

"Stop playing the victim or giving her one last chance like she's a good person. If Kasama didn't love me and kept hurting my feelings by saying she loves another woman who I despise and don't want to hear about anymore..."

"I'm proud of my wickedness, but it seems like you, Kaew, always have something unpredictable."

Machine Translated by Google

"Answer me now: are you going to cooperate with me or not? If not, I'll resolve this my way."

"And what will I get in return?"

"The destruction of the Watinwanich and the Amornjinda!"

If my life has already been destroyed to the point where I can't start over...

Whoever caused my pain, everyone will have to destroy themselves too!

[“Rose, today Moddaeng has good news to tell you, two things. Which one do you want to hear first?”]

"Anyway, Moddaeng. Stop stalling and tell me already!"

[“The first is that the Moddaeng case has made progress! Today the police called Mr. Wasu to testify again. In the previous days, there was no progress. It must be related to the commander who was removed, for sure.”]

“Has the commander been transferred?”

[“Yes, Moddaeng just found out when he saw the police officers talking at the police station. It seems he was abruptly removed and will still be investigated for corruption.
The other day, Mrs. Lom said that this commander was probably allied with Farmer Wasupon, so he helped manipulate the cases and make the culprits escape.”]

Machine Translated by Google

Although she didn’t know all the details, what Moddaeng said was good news for Rose. After all, if they had a police officer who worked with integrity, it would be much better than those who manipulate the truth to help criminals, just because they are part of the same group or have common interests.

“And what’s the other good news?”

[“Now, Moddaeng has gone to visit Farmer Thipakorn at the hospital on behalf of Miss Rose. The doctor informed him that the farmer will be transferred to a regular room today. The doctor asked Moddaeng to inform the family, and all that is left is for Miss Rose to sign the documents so that he can be transferred.”]

“Dad! It’s okay, Moddaeng. I’ll call Din so we can go to the hospital right now!”

[“Okay, Miss Rose. Then I’ll wait at the hospital.”]

"Take care of my father, okay? Tell him I'll run to see him soon."

Tippapha quickly hung up the phone, feeling excited about the two pieces of good news. And, of course, the best of them was that her father was getting better. The doctor had authorized him to be moved to a regular room, which represented a huge improvement in her father’s health, something she had been hoping for since the moment she heard about the car accident.

“Our Rose!”

“Din! Today my father will be transferred to the common room to continue his recovery. Moddaeng called me to tell me. I need to go to the hospital right now.”

Machine Translated by Google

“I was also about to tell you good news, but Moddaeng beat me to it!”

Kasama smiled, giving up, as the information she wanted to give to Tippapha after finishing the conversation with Wayo came too late, as Moddaeng, with his agility, called Rose
immediately and reported everything.

“What does this mean?”

“Lom called me to tell me about Thipakorn. He said he’ll be coming to pick us up soon to go to the hospital. He should be here soon. After that, we can go back to the farm. That way, Rose will be able to visit Thipakorn every day. I know that if you don’t go for three or four days, you’ll miss him a lot.”

“So does that mean the situation is now safe?”

“To some extent, yes. We cannot relax completely, but the actions Lom has taken in recent days have given us a significant advantage.”

“Do these actions by Lom have anything to do with the commander’s removal?”

“Has Moddaeng told N'Rose about this yet?”

“Yes, Moddaeng told Rose.”

“It’s directly related. If it weren’t for Lom asking his father for help, nothing would have been so easy.”

Din observed Tippapha's pretty face, who still looked confused and didn't understand what she was trying to explain.
So she continued to tell the whole story, as Wayo
normally never bragged to anyone about being the daughter of a high-ranking police officer. Despite having a father

Machine Translated by Google

who was a high-ranking police officer, Wayo did not like to be seen as a "child of influence." When asked about her surname, she would often say that she was the daughter of a servant in the house. Uncle Watit often complained about the stubbornness of his daughter, the lieutenant.

“Uncle Watit, Lom’s father, is a high-ranking police officer. A few days ago, Lom went to the family for help on this matter, and with the evidence that the commander was involved in corruption, he was questioned and transferred immediately.”

“Rose never knew Lom’s father was a police officer.”

“Lom never told anyone. If the Mahattanakorn case hadn’t gone this far, Lom would never have asked his uncle for help.”

“P'Din, Rose, are they talking bad about Lom?”

“Lom, thank you very much for your help and sorry for causing you trouble.”

“Don't worry, Rose, because for P'Sa-Nai, Lom was already completely involved.”

She just hoped that everything would work out for the best and that there would be a quick conclusion to all issues.

"Dad, do you remember what happened that night?"

"Mm."

Machine Translated by Google

Mr. Thipakorn responded with a low, almost inaudible sound, as if he was trying to communicate. After being questioned by his daughter about the event that had occurred some time ago, it was still fresh in his memory, something he could not forget, especially considering that it was due to this event that he found himself in this condition, with serious injuries, requiring brain surgery and beginning the process of physical recovery to return as close as possible to his former self.

"It wasn't an accident, was it?"

"Wa...we."

"No need to force it, Dad. If you can't do it, we can stop here."

"Wasu...wasu."

"Does this mean that Mr. Thipakorn saw Mr. Wasu at the scene of the incident that night and confirms that it was not an accident?"

"Yes."

Kasama watched Wayo, who had asked Mr.
Thipakorn, as he tried to nod, confirmed with a nod the accurate prediction.
This meant that the fact that the car's memory card had disappeared from the scene of the incident was not a coincidence, but rather a deliberate action to destroy the criminal's evidence in order to prevent any clues leading to the perpetrator.

"If the father gets better and can communicate, he can give his statement to the police. That could lead to Wasu being prosecuted, right? What he did was clearly attempted murder."

Machine Translated by Google

"When Mr. Thipakorn is able to testify, it will be helpful to the case, but unfortunately the dashcam evidence from the car was stolen, and there are no security cameras in the area that could have captured what happened."

"Don't worry, N'Rose. I believe there must be a solution."

Din tried to comfort his beloved, who looked disappointed. Thipakorn's recovery was a key piece in this game, but it was also a piece that could not change the situation the way they wanted. Because there was still a crucial piece of evidence missing, much more relevant than the victim's testimony.

“I won’t give up until my father gets justice!”

"It's a police car, isn't it? Why is it parked in front of the house?"

"That's right, Moddaeng. Is this car your subordinate, Mr. Lorn's?"

"No, N'Rose."

Wayo responded with surprise before turning the car around and parking it next to the police car that was in front of Din’s house that afternoon. She, Din, N’Rose, and Moddaeng had just returned from the hospital after talking to Mr. Thipakorn to gather information needed for the case. She had no idea that the police would come to the farm at this time.

"Hello, is there something wrong?"

Machine Translated by Google

"You are Kasama Watinwanich, the owner of the 'Saenrak' farm, right?"

"Yes, it's me."

"We need to invite her to testify at the police station right now."

"Wait! This isn't a misunderstanding, is it? Why are the police taking her?"

"This morning, officers carried out an inspection of the farm's delivery truck, which was on its way to Chiang Mai, and found 500 kilograms of drugs hidden in bags of raw materials. The truck driver claimed that he knew nothing about it and was simply making the delivery as ordered. Therefore, we need to invite her to give further details. Please come with us."

"Then I'll go with her."

"N'Rose, you better wait here. What I'm going to do is just give my statement, there's no reason to worry."

Kasama asked Tippapha to wait at the 'Saenrak' farm for security reasons, as she believed that the drugs found in the farm's truck were probably a set-up by enemies, and she already knew who it could be.

But if he were innocent and had verifiable working procedures, Kasama believed his enemies' plan would not succeed.

"N'Rose, stay here. I'll accompany Din."

"Mr. Lorn, she's going to be okay, right? She's innocent. This has to be a setup."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't worry, N'Rose. The evidence and the truth will prove her innocence."

After being questioned for almost two hours without any clear evidence, the police had to release the owner of Saenrak Farm, who could have had some connection to drug trafficking. However, as there was still not enough evidence to incriminate her, and with the arrival of a new commander who had no connection to Mahattanakorn, the case did not progress as expected. Otherwise, she would have been the target of some dirty trick and could have been behind bars that very night.

“The only person capable of creating this situation is someone who knows the working system from the inside. That day, I told P’Din not to let Madam Kaew escape.”

“You think it was Kaew, don’t you?”

“I believe that Kaew must have allied with Mahattanakorn. P'Din made a mistake. From now on, our situation will be even more difficult.”

“I just wanted to give Kaew a chance to redeem herself.”

“But if you give the wrong person a chance, not only will they not be able to do any good, they may even turn against us.”

Wayo spoke with concern about the tense situation they were in. Watinwanich was leading this game, but giving the wrong person a chance turned the situation upside down, putting them at a disadvantage. Now, Mahattanakorn must be laughing, knowing that Kaew

Machine Translated by Google

allied with them. It was unknown how far the chaos caused by Kaew could affect them, and how much more trouble they would have to face.

"P'Din is back."

"N'Rose."

"P'Din, are you okay? What did the police say? Do they believe you are innocent?"

"Everything will follow the law. From now on, I need to find more evidence to prove my innocence, that the Saenrak Farm is not involved with drugs."

Kasama responded calmly to Tippapha, trying to maintain her composure despite the doubts and accusations she faced. When they returned to Saenrak Farm, she still could not fully understand what was happening. If someone was really trying to manipulate the situation, they would have done so while she and Tippapha had been away for the past few days, a time when Wayo was also not in Chiang Rai.

"Moddaeng, when N'Rose and I were away, did anything strange happen on the farm?"

"Nothing, P'Din. Lady Wayo's people were keeping watch. If something had gone wrong, they probably would have noticed."

"The people of Wayo said that no one from outside entered."

"P'Din, what are you suspecting?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I think this is all Kaew's doing."

"Ah, speaking of Kaew, I remember now, P'Din. Yesterday, Auntie Chan said that Uncle Kla stopped by to check, and when he found out that you hadn't come back yet, he left an envelope for you. Auntie Chan must have put it in your workroom..."

Before she finished speaking, Kasama quickly ran home, heading straight to the workroom, with Tippapha and Wayo following her. She found the brown envelope, half an A4 size, on the worktable, just as Moddaeng had said, that Uncle Kla had asked Aunty Chan to deliver.

"Memory Card"

Tippapha asked with a voice full of curiosity and looked at Wayo, who looked equally confused, before P'Din hurriedly opened the file on the notebook, wanting to know what could be so important inside a simple memory card.

"Is it... the memory card from your dad's car camera?"

"No, N'Rose. It looks like it's a file from Wasu's car camera."

"As your father was trying to say, indeed... Wasu was at the scene of the incident that night."

"Wasu must have quickly left the scene as soon as he heard another car approaching. That was just when T'Pei arrived and called the ambulance."

"With the clear evidence, both the images and the audio, there is no way Wasu can get away with this!"

Machine Translated by Google

Lieutenant Wayo spoke with a voice full of certainty, believing that they could finally incriminate the real culprit now that they had this important piece of evidence, and yet it seemed like there was more to come.

"There are more files, this is an audio file."

"The voice of Wasu and N'Kaew!"

"This evidence was sent by N'Kaew."

Kasama concluded with conviction, believing that the chance she had given her former friend would not come back to destroy her, as Wayo feared. Although she could not forgive what N'Kaew had done, she felt gratitude because, in the end, N'Kaew had done the right thing.

"Let me try, P'Din. Now that we have such solid evidence, even if it's from big figures, they won't escape!"

"Leave the evidence to us, we'll take care of it."

"Don't worry, P'Din. Their game is over. Keep an eye out, we'll soon see the end of Mahattanakorn!"

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 17

Flowers that bloom must also wither.

"Tomorrow, Wasu will be arrested at the farm to face court proceedings as per the arrest warrant. I believe he will not be allowed to post bail this time as the police will likely oppose it, fearing that the criminal will tamper with evidence or even flee or commit more crimes."

"I hope that this time Mahattanakorn won't be able to escape. That all of this will finally end."

"With a little more time, everything will be resolved, P'Din. The culprit will certainly be punished in prison."

"What about N'Kaew?"

Kasama asked about her former friend, who had been a key player in helping to make closing the Mahattanakorn case easier. If it weren't for the evidence N'Kaew had risked sending secretly, they would probably still be trying to find a way to bring the culprits to justice. So Kasama wanted to do something to repay her and thank her for her help.

"The people of Wayo are looking for her, but no one has yet been able to find out where N'Kaew is hiding."

"Even if Wasu is arrested, N'Kaew will not be safe, because while fighting for her case and that of her son, I believe Wasupon will find a way to get revenge."

Machine Translated by Google

"I will find N'Kaew before they find her, to protect her and use her as a witness."

"I trust you, Wayo. At the very least, I want N'Kaew to be safe and have a chance to start her life over."

"Don't worry, P'Din. Because N'Kaew chose to help us and didn't waste the opportunity you gave her. I will help her until the end."

Although N'Kaew has done terrible things that cannot be forgiven, if she is now doing what is right, even if she cannot make amends for the mistakes she made, she deserves to be protected from the clutches of Mahattanakorn. No one else should lose their lives to such irresponsible people.

"Ah, why did you bring the young lady back? You said you would hand her over to
P'Din and Wayo."

"P'Din and Wayo are discussing an important matter. I don't want to be impolite."

"It's nothing, I think you're overthinking it.
After all, we are from the same family. If it were me who was impetuous and interfered, then yes, it would be more impolite."

Tippapha did not respond to Moddaeng's comment, and instead took the tray with drinks, such as black coffee, that she had prepared for P'Din and Wayo, along with some snacks, and placed it on the side table in the garden. She did not want to show herself or be rude to the

Machine Translated by Google

make it clear that she had heard the entire conversation between her girlfriend and her cousin.

"Are you okay, Rose? You look worried."

"I just have something on my mind, Moddaeng."

"Don't worry, Rose. Trust in Wayo's ability. If the police said that everything is about to end, that means that after the criminal is captured, all of you, P'Din, P'Thip, and everyone at Chomchan Farm and Saenrak Farm, will be safe and everything will return to tranquility."

"I'm not worried about that, Moddaeng. Because in the end, the guilty party will have to face the consequences of their own actions."

"So what are you worried about, Rose?"

"I'm thinking about N'Kaew."

"Ah, if it's about that, there's no need to worry. N'Kaew is gone and won't be returning to Saenrak Farm. Either way, you and Moddaeng will always be number one. There's no reason to worry."

The beautiful woman sighed, clearly distraught. Even if Moddaeng tried to cheer her up or talk about being number one, it didn't make her feel proud of her position, nor happy that she had earned the title of winner and was with P'Din, alone.

She knew that what N'Kaew did was wrong and terrible, but over time, she also displayed impulsive and exaggerated behaviors, without considering the feelings of those close to P'Din. Although this arose from jealousy, which caused her to behave

Machine Translated by Google

as if she owned P'Din, especially when she had yet to open her heart to Din and acknowledge that her feelings were reciprocated. And as for N'Kaew, P'Din had talked to her when they were in the safe haven.

P'Din told her everything about N'Kaew and explained that she actually knew how N'Kaew felt, but since she was an important friend, she took a clear stance to avoid any problems. P'Din did not blame her for anything that happened, unlike N'Kaew, who blamed her for everything, believing that she was the cause of the problems in P'Din's life and everyone at Saenrak Farm.

Furthermore, N'Kaew risked her safety to collect important evidence and deliver it to P'Din. N'Kaew's love for P'Din was immense, a lasting and devoted love, and this made her feel confused and insecure about whether the love she had for P'Din would be enough to compete with it.

There was still the long-standing connection between two people who were more than friends and helpers, as P'Din told her, expressing her disappointment and sadness, as she saw N'Kaew as part of the family. Therefore, she still cared about her and asked Wayo to protect her.

"The love N'Kaew has for P'Din, even though it's problematic, is greater than one can imagine."

"Are you still jealous of N'Kaew, Rose? I think if there's something, it would be best to talk to P'Din directly, don't you think?"

"No, Moddaeng. Now I'm not speaking out of jealousy. I'm just saying what I really feel about the situation."

Machine Translated by Google

And she also prayed that N'Kaew would be safe, away from any more tragedies...

"Daddy, the police raided the farm! It's full of police officers!"

Why is everyone coming here? Did Wasu do something again? Go and ask!

Mr. Wasupon ordered his subordinates to find the reason for yet another problem his son had caused, which made him always have to help him clean up the mess. After composing himself, he went to face the police who had invaded the farm without warning.

"Good morning, gentlemen officers. It seems that you are visiting my farm frequently. If you are not careful, I will start to think that this is a personal persecution."

"This is certainly not an unjust persecution. Today we are here with an arrest warrant to arrest Mr. Wasu Mahattanakorn and bring him to face the charges."

The officer in charge of the case showed the warrant to Wasupon, following procedure, and then gave the order for the police to raid the premises and arrest the accused for prosecution.

"I think there's a misunderstanding. My son didn't do anything wrong."

"Mr. Wasupon, you will also need to come to the police station, as we suspect that you are

Machine Translated by Google

involved in a drug trafficking case through illegal border routes. The police have new evidence that was obtained last time."

"..."

"Arrest Mr. Wasupon and take him to the police station."

"Wanna play with me? You chose the

wrong person!" **Bang!**

The sound of a gunshot echoed from the accused's gun, hitting the police officer and causing him to fall to the ground, before his subordinates, armed with military rifles, began firing wildly at the officers to rescue Wasupon from arrest. Meanwhile, the officers scattered for cover, triggering a sustained gunfight.

"Don't let the accused escape! Activate the lockdown!"

The police chief quickly gave the order after Wasu, the accused, grabbed Wasupon and put him in a truck without a license plate and fled the farm at high speed, accompanied by several vehicles belonging to his subordinates, making it difficult for the police to track them. The criminals also shot at the vehicle's tires, causing it to almost roll over, which allowed them to escape the pursuit.

This allowed Mahattanakorn to once again escape the situation without being arrested!

Machine Translated by Google

“P'Din, Ms. Kaew has contacted you.”

“Did you find Kaew, Lom?”

“The police said that Ms. Kaew has been contacted to be a witness and testify tomorrow. I have tracked the signal from the phone she used to contact them. Ms. Kaew’s location is in Chiang Mai.”

“Chiang Mai, really?”

“But I still don’t know the exact location in Chiang Mai, but my team is looking for it.”

“I think I can guess, Lom. Kaew must be hiding at a relative’s house in Chiang Mai. Uncle Kla must know where she is.”

This is because, in Chiang Mai, it is Kaew's old home before she moved to Chiang Rai several decades ago.
And what I remember, Kasama already heard the assistant say that the deceased aunt left this house as an inheritance to Kaew.
This means that the safest place now, away from the reach of

Mahattanakorn, it would be there, where no one knows where it is and cannot find it.

“P'Din, Lom, have you seen the breaking news?”

“Rose, what happened?”

“Rose saw the news about Wasu and his foster father, Wasupon, fighting the police. And now they’ve both managed to evade the arrest warrant. The police are trying to track them down. I’m worried, P’Din. I’m afraid they’ll get angry and come here.”

“Don’t worry, Rose. I won’t let anyone hurt you.”

Machine Translated by Google

“Lom will send reinforcements to guard the farm while we try to catch them. During the time that Lom is not here, until he returns, P'Din and you, Rose, are to stay here. Do not leave under any circumstances.”

“Take care of yourself too, Lom!”

Kasama worriedly warned Wayo about his wife's safety and calmly comforted Tippapha. Although the situation was now dangerous and there was no way to relax, she had to be strong and be there for her wife, as well as protect her as best she could, as promised.

"Dad, you can go ahead, I can't go yet because I have some things I need to take care of."

"Don't be stupid, Wasu! If you don't run away now, will you wait for the cops to find you and take you to jail?"

"I'll run away, but only after I finish off the traitor.
That wretch, Kaew!"

"Dad, we need to go now before the police find us."

"Your call, Wasu."

Mr. Wasupon, who seemed to love his son very much, but when it comes to saving his own skin, is willing to cut through any obstacles and put his own interests first. Like now, when he decides to escape from prison and go to a neighboring country through a route used for transportation, where he has allies ready to help, since he transferred some assets to

Machine Translated by Google

prepare them in case of emergency. Mahattanakorn, no matter what happens, will never be caught and thrown in prison as they expect.

"Sir, if you don't run away now, you may not be able to escape."

"Let me run away like a cornered dog and let them be happy that they defeated me."

"But, sir, if we can retreat and wait for the opportunity for revenge, it will not be too late. But if you are arrested, you will not have a chance to take revenge."

"I will not back down or wait for any opportunity, because now I need to destroy their lives completely!"

Din, the cocky lieutenant, Rose, Kaew...

You have destroyed my life, Mahattanakorn, and now my comfortable life is coming to an end, whose fault is it?
You will all destroy yourselves and die along with me.

"Hello, Kaew."

"Who are you?"

"We are Lieutenant Wayo's subordinates. She sent us to bring you to the safe house for safety reasons, as Mr. Wasu and his father, Wasupon, are now on the run from the police."

"And how do you know where I am?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Uncle Kla, Mrs. Kaew's father, was the one who passed the location on to Mr. Kasama."

Kaew listened to Lieutenant Wayo's subordinates' response with suspicion, not easily trusting anyone, especially in a situation as delicate as the one she was in. After tricking Wasu into trusting her, she infiltrated Nabanan Farm before obtaining secret information about the two, father and son, and delivering it to Kasama, as she wanted to use the opportunity she had to do something right for once. She thought that by now the Mahattanakorn already knew and were running away, and that Wasu probably knew that she was the traitor, the poisonous snake that bit her. "Let's get out of here, Kaew, follow us." **Bang! Bang!**

"Wasu."

"What's wrong, Kaew? Did you turn so pale from seeing me?"

Wasu said through gritted teeth, after taking advantage of the moment to shoot the two subordinates of the cocky lieutenant, eliminating any chance of help for Kaew.
She probably regretted trying to oppose him and destroy someone like him. Before joining anyone, he always investigated the other's history thoroughly, and if she thought the house in Chiang Mai would protect her from his tentacles, she made a big mistake.

"If you are so full of anger, come kill me. Why kill others who have nothing to do with it?"

"Killing you here would be too easy, Kaew. Even if you die, it wouldn't be fun. I'd rather use you before you die and watch the one you love die in front of you."

Machine Translated by Google

"Don't do anything to P'Din!"

"You won't even have the breath to speak anymore, but you still love her. Pathetic, Kaew. You, the traitor who dared to betray me, I will make your life torture. It will be like living dead."

"Now, I'm not afraid of death. If hell has

you and the entire Mahattanakorn lineage, I will be happy to

go." **Pah!**

The man raised the gun and slapped her in the face with the butt, causing her head to turn with the force of the impact, while blood flowed from the wound on her lip.
Even after such a beating, Kaew still looked defiant, taunting as if she was no longer afraid of death.

"Take her to the car. After you use her, I'll let you do whatever you want with her. Until then, if you want, do whatever you want."

You, however, will rot in hell and wish you had never been born!

"Lieutenant, we have been unable to contact our men."

"And is there any news from the police chief?" "Latest

news: we found the criminals' car, which was parked in the woods next to the road, but we didn't find anyone. Now the police chief is

Machine Translated by Google

organizing a wide search of the surrounding area as we fear the criminals may try to flee to another country."

Wayo listened to the report from the subordinate who accompanied her in Chiang Mai. After sending more men to protect Saenrak Farm, upon learning of the escape of the two Mahattanakorn, she immediately headed to the coordinates provided by the head of security, Uncle Kla, and ordered the other subordinates to advance the search to ensure that Wasu's men did not arrive before her and take the important witness.

"We've arrived on the scene. Stay alert, Sergeant."

The lieutenant grabbed his gun and prepared for the search operation, speeding up when he saw his subordinates' car parked in front of the house, and soon found a body lying in a pool of blood. One of the two was dead, while the other was seriously injured, but still conscious enough to communicate.

"Sergeant, call an ambulance to take the injured man!"

"Wasu... took the witness."

"Wasu!"

The lieutenant, now alert, ran back to his car and began driving at high speed, heading towards Saenrak Farm. He hoped that things would not unfold as he feared. Otherwise, the next destination for the criminals, who were evading capture, would probably be Saenrak Farm, where he had important people.

"Shit, we fell into their trap!"

Machine Translated by Google

"P'Din! What was that gunshot sound?"

"It looks like there was a shooting outside."

Kasama hugged Tippapha, who was anxiously awaiting the developments at Saenrak Farm, worried. After her beloved was startled by the first gunshot, a series of near-deafening gunshots followed. That was when one of her subordinates, Moddaeng, ran to them in the office.

"Lady Din, Miss Rose, Wasu's men have invaded! Should we flee now? They are armed with heavy weapons, and Lady Lom's men won't be able to hold out for long."

"P'Din, what should we do?"

"Calm down, Rose. Don't be afraid, I'm here."

Tippapha looked at his wife, who was still calm, trying to keep her calm so that she wouldn't lose her composure. P'Din then took the gun from the drawer and prepared for any emergency, keeping his hand over hers, as if ready to protect her at any moment.

"Let's get out of here."

The woman led her beloved away from the dangerous situation, where a direct confrontation would be too risky, and she did not want anyone else to be lost at the hands of such cruel people as Mahattanakorn. With all the evidence they now had, there was no longer any doubt as to who he was.

Machine Translated by Google

Mahattanakorn was someone who never regretted his actions!

"What's this? We haven't even said hello and you're already running away, Din!"

"Wasu!"

Kasama named the one who had broken into the house, meaning that Lom's men sent to protect her were probably all eliminated. Before Wasu could aim his gun at her and Tippapha, Kasama quickly pushed his wife into hiding behind him and grabbed her own gun, ready to react if Wasu tried to harm any of her companions.

"Calm down, Kasama. Don't think I'm going to finish you off now. We still have a lot of fun ahead of us."

"What do you want, Wasu?"

"You still have the nerve to ask what I want after everything you've done?
You destroyed Mahattanakorn, made me and my father have to flee. This is all your fault."

"No, it's all your fault, Wasu. The dirty things Mahattanakorn did were never forced, you did everything of your own free will. And now you have to bear the consequences of your own actions."

We all receive the consequences of our actions, no matter how late or early, but in the end, the truth is that Wasu is receiving the end that he himself created. This means that at least the world still has some justice.

"Shut up!"

Machine Translated by Google

"You're right, P'Din. Accept the truth, you scoundrel."

"It's a good thing you're here, you ant. I've been wanting to get revenge on you for a while now."

"Moddaeng! Don't do anything to Moddaeng!"

The owner of the beautiful face screamed when she saw Moddaeng being attacked by Wasu, after having confronted the truth.
He then used the gun to slap Moddaeng in the face, causing her to fall and hit her head on the wall, knocking her unconscious.

"Now that the matter is quiet, I can finally negotiate with you."

"What do you want?"

"You guys will take the gift I prepared for P'Din."

Kasama observed and assessed the other side's posture, who had given orders for his subordinates to bring something to her workroom.
Apparently, Wasu's men were only two. If she could buy time until Wayo arrived, as she had taken advantage of the moment to call her cousin earlier, at least Wayo would have heard and been aware of everything that was happening.

"So, what do you think, P'Din? Did you like the gift I prepared for you?"

"Kaew!"

"P'Din, don't believe him."

"You look at Kaew with those worried eyes, aren't you afraid of getting into trouble with your wife, P'Din?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I trust P'Din above all else. No need to try to complicate things, Wasu."

How did she not know how bad the situation was now? Because Kaew was being used as a shield and hostage by Wasu, and the visible bruises on her face showed that she had been injured before. It was as if if P'Din pulled the trigger, the real victim, Kaew, would be the first to be hit. But if Wasu fired at any moment, P'Din would have to take the shot in her place, since she had placed her behind her to protect her.

"Why would I manipulate you, Rose? If you weren't stupid, you would use what little brain you have to understand reality."

"What reality?"

"The reality is that P'Din is never satisfied. What do you call that? Loving your friend and mourning your wife? Or fishing with both hands? But like I said, Rose, you're her wife and Kaew is her ex. It's hard to choose between one or the other."

"..."

"That's not true, N'Rose."

"P'Din, you don't need to explain. I don't believe Wasu's words. Only an idiot would."

Tippapha shouted angrily and in a loud tone, because she didn't want to act foolishly or get caught up in the villains' game, putting P'Din in an even more difficult position. P'Din was already doing his best to protect her. She knew that Din loved her, and she loved her very much too. In the most difficult times, the only thing they could do was trust each other, so they could get through this difficult situation safely.

Machine Translated by Google

"Ugh, until now you're still going to trust P'Din? You're an idiot, Rose. Do you want me to prove something to you? Maybe then you'll finally open your eyes and stop being fooled by this fake."

"Stop talking, Wasu. No matter how hard you try, you won't destroy the trust Rose and I have."

"So, you can handle it, right, P'Din? If I blow Kaew's head off right here in front of you, I'll kill her right in front of you..."

"No, Wasu! Don't do anything to Kaew!"

"See? Just one threat and you're already clinging to Kaew without even caring about your wife."

"Kaew is my friend, Rose is my heart, and most importantly, I won't let you hurt anyone else."

"Then let's negotiate, P'Din."

Kasama glared at Wasu, who was staring at her with a hard expression, before making a proposal that seemed like a psychological attack, accompanied by a laugh as if he had completely lost his reason.

Now, the other side was willing to do unexpected things or even commit acts without thinking about the consequences, without fear of making mistakes.

"Between Kaew and Rose, which one do you choose?"

"I don't have to choose. Rose is the one I love, and Kaew is my friend." "So, between watching your friend die or watching your wife die, what do you choose, P'Din? If you choose Rose, I'll kill Kaew, but if you choose Rose, I'll kill Kaew."

Machine Translated by Google

Kaew, Rose dies."

"..."

"Choose now, damn it! Are you mute now?"

Although the answer was clear, if she had to choose someone, she would choose Rose without hesitation. But the truth was that by making that choice, she would be sending her friend Kaew to her death, handing her friend over to the reaper, without trying to protect her, even though she was the one who helped her, using the opportunities she had to deal with the Mahatthanakorn.

Even if she didn't love Kaew...

She wouldn't allow someone who was like her family to be murdered!

She would have to find a way to protect Tippapha and make sure Kaew didn't have to sacrifice himself. There had to be a way out, something she could do to resolve the situation.

"I'll count to three. If you don't decide, the first person I'll kill is you."

Wasu cocked his gun, ready to shoot one of the three women in front of him. If Kasama didn't choose between Rose and Kaew in this game he had set up, the first person to die in front of the two women he loved would be Kasama.

But he had probably forgotten that people who pretend to be good often have short lives!

"One, two..."

"P'Din! Quickly, take Rose away! I'll hold them off."

Machine Translated by Google

She knew that P'Din was a good person, and even if she had made mistakes with important people, P'Din would never think of harming her or letting her face death, something she no longer feared.

Death, how painful could it be? She had already experienced so much disappointment and sadness from unrequited love, being rejected by someone she loved, and seeing the reality of P'Din's actions, knowing clearly that if it came down to it, she would choose to protect Rose.

P'Din would protect her out of love...

Kaew would also protect her, out of love...

"Kaew! Watch out!"

Kasama shouted, warning Kaew to be careful, after the other person, on impulse, tried to grab the gun from Wasu, who was about to shoot her. While Kaew probably did not have enough strength to fight the tall man, the gun in Wasu's hand was swinging all over the place. Kasama quickly positioned himself to protect and cover Tippapha, afraid that the bullet might deflect and hit his wife.

"You're going to die, Kaew!"

"You, wretch, are the one who must die,

Wasu!" **Bang!**

The sound of a gunshot echoed unexpectedly, as Tippapha hugged her lover in shock. From where she was standing, she didn’t know if the bullet had hit one of the two who were fighting and had suddenly stopped. Before she knew it, drops of blood began to flow from a body, and Kaew’s body collapsed, hit by the bullet.

Machine Translated by Google

"Hey, the police are coming."

"Shit! We're out of ammo. Let's get out of here."

Wasu cursed in frustration, seeing that he didn't have enough ammunition to kill Kasama or Tippapha, but at least he managed to eliminate the poisonous snake like Kaew.
He planned to leave, regroup, and return when he had a chance to exact revenge on what was left.

"P'Din, Rose, how are you? Sorry for falling into their trap..."

"Wayo, call an ambulance, Kaew was hit by Wasu."

"You, P'Din?"

"Don't worry, Kaew. Hold on tight."

"Kaew, I'm sorry."

"No need to say anything else, Kaew. Once you get to the doctor, you'll be fine."

“...”

Although she wanted to believe that everything would be fine, she didn’t want to fall for the words of a bad person who was trying to manipulate her. She didn’t want to behave childishly or disrespectfully toward someone who had always given her love. But why was Rose’s heart aching?

Maybe it was seeing P'Din's reaction to someone else at this moment.

Rose also wanted P'Din to hold her affectionately...

And that he would comfort her, saying that everything would be okay.

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 18

She pondered her heart, wondering who was inside.

"Are you sure everything is okay? I think it would be best to let the doctor do a more detailed examination, in case there is anything out of the ordinary. When it all happened, Kaew's head hit the wall and she lost consciousness."

"Kaew's head was only cut a little, but it's already been stitched up. Don't worry, she's fine. She even seems stronger than I thought, you don't need to worry, Rose."

"I'm sorry I couldn't protect Kaew."

"You don't need to feel guilty, Rose. This is not your fault. It was the fault of people connected to the Mahattanakorn.
Unfortunately, Wasupon managed to escape. A bad person like him should be in prison together with Wasu!"

Tippapha also felt sad, after all, the culprit, Wasupon, had managed to escape with his wiles. She had learned from Wayo that after the incident, Wasupon had fled to a neighboring country. Wasu was seriously injured after resisting arrest by the police and an exchange of gunfire, but he was captured and taken to the hospital for treatment.

Even though Wasu had done many bad things and killed innocent people, she didn't want him to die. If he did, he wouldn't understand the mistake he had made. She wanted him to be safe as a human being and to be locked up until he understood the gravity of what he had done.

Machine Translated by Google

"Or would you rather Wasu die soon, after everything he's done? I pray he doesn't survive, that he dies in the operating room!"

"Don't compete with him, that would be a sin, Moddaeng. What people do will have its consequences."

"You're too kind, Rose. I don't want to feel sorry for a bad person."

"True. Moddaeng, stay here while I go see P'Din.
I don't know how she is, I need to know."

After the incident at the farm was over, P'Din took Kaew to the ambulance, while Wayo brought Tippapha and Moddaeng, who was beginning to regain consciousness, to the hospital. Rose wanted to make sure that Kaew was checked out and that her wounds were treated. Afterwards, she went to her father's room, where Wayo updated her on the situation, saying that Wasu had been arrested and was seriously injured.
She had also learned that P'Din was waiting in front of the operating room, waiting for news that Kaew was out of danger or safe.

"But Rose, you look pale. I think it's best to wait here while I go get P'Din."

"Don't worry, Moddaeng, I'm fine."

"Rose! Someone please help! Nurse, someone passed out!"

Moddaeng asked the nurse for help when she saw Rose faint in front of her. She had noticed that Rose looked tired and exhausted, especially after leaving the farm with Wayo. But when the lieutenant asked, Rose seemed to respond the same way she had told Moddaeng, saying that everything was fine.

Machine Translated by Google

"I want to apologize to you, P'Din. I'm sorry for not raising my daughter properly. Kaew has gone off and caused trouble for you, even though you and your father have been very good to both of us."

"Now is not the time to blame Kaew. I have already forgiven her for everything she has done. What I ask now is just for Kaew to return safely."

"Kaew, please don't die, daughter. Come back to me. You need to come back to thank P'Din for everything."

Kasama stared at her friend, who seemed to be drowning in grief. She and the head of the staff had been waiting in the operating room for nearly three hours now, without any news or updates from the medical team that was trying to save Kaew's life.

Kaew sacrificed herself to protect her and the people she loved. That was why Kaew was seriously injured, with her condition between life and death. It was not only that Kaew should recover so that she could thank her, but as a friend, she also wanted to repay the help and everything Kaew had done for Watinwanich and Amornjinda. She wanted to apologize for everything and tell those important people, who were like her family, that she wanted them to be friends again.

And that she would forgive all mistakes without keeping grudge...

"P'Din, the doctor is out."

Machine Translated by Google

"Doctor, how is Kaew? Is she safe?"

"At this time, her general condition is no longer critical.
She lost a lot of blood because the bullet went through her ribs and was close to her lungs. The internal bleeding also affected her breathing. The doctor is now performing surgery to remove the bullets and control the bleeding. We need to watch for complications or further bleeding in the affected areas."

"..."

"After surgery, the doctor will transfer the patient to the ICU to monitor for possible complications daily.
If during this time there is no more bleeding and the wound heals quickly, the patient is safe and will come out of the crisis."

Kaew needs to fight to get back, just like I fought to get back. Kaew will hear from me that I have already forgiven her and that I want us to be good friends again.

Get up soon so we can fix everything together, Kaew...

"See? Because of you, Rose, the doctor had to give you IV fluids."

"I'm not that bad, Moddaeng."

"The doctor just said that you went through such a shock that it made you faint. That's why you're not well and you fainted."

Machine Translated by Google

Don't tell P'Din, please. Don't tell my father either.

"But..."

"Everyone has been through enough hardships. I don't want to be another problem for P'Din and my father to worry about."

She didn't want something small like this to cause more confusion for the people around her, especially for something that originated with her. Both her father, who was trying to recover and get out of the hospital soon, and P'Din, who had to deal with the case she was accused of, solve the Mahattanakorn case, and still monitor the condition of Kaew, who was shot while trying to protect P'Din.

Since P’Din already had heavy burdens to bear, she wanted to act more maturely and ease the burden she was feeling. Although what she could do wasn’t as grand as what Kaew did, she was always willing to do whatever it took to help P’Din. “Maybe it would be better if you called P’Din to come here and support you. That way, you would have strength.”

"I'm fine, just a small cut, but Kaew was shot and is in serious condition, Moddaeng. The person who needs P'Din's support right now isn't me."

"I know, Moddaeng, that you're worried about Kaew.
As someone who knows her, I worry too.
But P'Din can care about both Kaew and you, it doesn't have to be just one person."

"..."

Machine Translated by Google

"Sorry, I'm going to slap myself in the mouth. What I said doesn't make sense."

"I also care about Kaew, and if there is still a chance, I want to apologize."

She wanted to apologize for many things she may have done inappropriately, which made Kaew feel bad.
At that moment, she didn't know that Kaew's relationship with P'Din was much deeper than it seemed.
Even if it wasn't something romantic, Kaew had always been important to P'Din before she herself came into the picture and caused trouble at Saenrak Farm.

Kaew always helped and stayed by P'Din's side for a long time, but she, who entered last, ended up showing possessiveness and jealousy, making her make the mistake of pushing Kaew away, which led Kaew to follow a wrong path and face difficulties.

Even though P'Din never said Rose was wrong...

Now, Rose needed to ask herself and reflect on everything she had done so far, and think: how should she proceed in the future?

“The doctor recommends that if the patient’s family has no problems with the costs and travel, it would be better to transfer him to continue treatment in Bangkok. There, there is more modern medical equipment than in the Chiang Rai branch hospital, which will allow the patient to recover fully.”

Machine Translated by Google

“Doctor, do you want me to take my father to continue his treatment in Bangkok?”

“I am just giving a recommendation. The final decision is up to the family and the patient themselves.”

Tippapha listened carefully to the doctor in charge as he discussed the directions for her father’s treatment. Although he was showing steady improvement and responding well to treatment, if the doctor’s recommendation was more beneficial to him than staying in the current hospital, she would be willing to take him to another facility to continue his recovery.

“Dad, do you want to go to Bangkok with Rose? That way, you can recover faster.”

With a radiant smile, the pretty-faced young woman asked her father, holding his hand affectionately. After all, things were starting to get sorted out. Wasu had been arrested by the police, while Wasupon, her father, was on the run from the authorities and probably wouldn’t have the courage to return to Nabanan Farm. Furthermore, Wayo had said that Kaew’s surgery had been a success, but her general condition still required daily monitoring and constant observation.

“Let’s go to Bangkok, Dad! Moddaeng wants to get out of Phu Yao and experience life in the big city.”

“I didn’t even say I was taking you along.”

“Oh! Rose, don’t be cruel to Moddaeng. I want to go and help you take care of father!”

“So you mean you’re only going to take care of my father? Does that mean you won’t take care of me?”

Machine Translated by Google

“But taking care of you is P'Din's job! She'll be there soon to take care of you too.”

"..."

It wasn't quite like that! Taking care of her wasn't P'Din's responsibility…

That was just a temporary request from his father, as he feared that something would happen to him sooner than expected.
But now he had recovered and would soon be completely well, allowing her to take on the role of caring for him. She could finally live with her father, as she had always dreamed, living a peaceful and happy life, without having to fear that the Mahattanakorn would persecute her or demand any promises.

Did this mean that the marriage of convenience was no longer necessary?

"P'Din."

"Lom."

"Don't tell me you've been here since last night."

"I just wanted to make sure Kaew was okay. The doctor just transferred her to the ICU."

She wanted to wait until she was sure everything was okay, so she could rest knowing she had done everything she could.
She even assured Uncle Kla that he didn't need to worry about the costs, as she would take care of it. All that mattered was that the doctors did everything they could to save her friend.

Machine Translated by Google

"From what I heard, the surgery was a success."

"But Kaew isn't out of danger yet. What about N'Rose? Where is she now?"

"She has been with Mr. Thipakorn since last night."

"I'll go look for her. She must be very worried by now."

Kasama mentioned her beloved, with whom she had faced difficult times. After going through the danger of fighting for Kaew's life, she felt relieved to know that Tippapha was safe. She had managed to protect her without letting her get even a scratch. She had also kept her promise to her wife and Mr. Thipakorn, proving that she had not failed those who trusted her.

"Before you go see Rose, come with me, P'Din."

"What happened?"

"Wasu has woken up. A guy like him really is lucky... It seems like hell isn't ready to receive him yet."

"And is there any news about Mr. Wasupon?"

"Last night, police found four charred bodies in a forest near the border. They are investigating their identities, but the bodies are so badly burned that there are no traces that would allow them to be immediately identified. No documents or evidence were found at the scene."

"Is there a possibility that one of them is Mr. Wasupon?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, there's a good chance, P'Din. If there was a conflict of interest, anyone who was rendered useless could have been eliminated or killed to cover the mastermind's tracks."

Even though the forensic examinations had yet to yield concrete results, Wayo was almost certain that the bodies found were those of Wasupon and his henchmen.
As for Wasu, even though he had survived, he was now beginning to pay for what he had done. This was evident by the furious screams that echoed from the room where he was hospitalized, under police surveillance to prevent his escape. "Let me go! If I leave here, you will all die!"

"Lieutenant, ever since the doctor finished his evaluation, the prisoner hasn't stopped freaking out."

"If he's so out of control, why did they only put handcuffs on him, Lom? Didn't they tie his feet?"

"Wasu was shot in the middle of his back while fighting the police officers. As a result, he has lost movement from the waist down and will no longer be able to walk. From now on, he will spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair... and will pay for his crimes in prison."

“Does he already know about the bodies, which possibly include Mr. Wasupon?”

“Not yet, P'Din. But if he's already in this state without knowing it, imagine when he finds out he's lost his father's protection? I think he'll really go crazy then.”

The time has come to pay for the sins of the past and spend the rest of your life reflecting on your crimes!

Machine Translated by Google

"N'Rose."

"P'Din."

Kasama hugged Tippapha with all her love, returning the younger girl's tight embrace. After going through such difficult times together and surviving, they could finally meet again there.

"Yeah! In that case, I'm going to go out and get something to eat. I don't want to get in the way."

Moddaeng cleared her throat lightly, drawing her friend's attention. Ever since she saw P'Din, she couldn't contain her feelings and threw herself into her arms without any reservations. Only then did she realize that she had shown her affection openly, right in front of her father and Wayo, which made her a little embarrassed. So she hurriedly moved away a little and hid it with a slight smile.

"Apologies for the delay."

"How is Kaew?"

"Overall, the situation is still worrying. The bullet hit the side of her rib and almost pierced her lung. Doctors managed to remove it, but she has not yet been able to leave the ICU."

"P'Din, don't worry. I believe Kaew will be fine."

Tippapha placed her hand over Kasama's, who held hers firmly. They both sought comfort in each other's warm touch, trying to compensate for the fear and anguish they were experiencing. However, they expressed their feelings in a restrained manner, because they knew they were

Machine Translated by Google

under the watchful eye of their father and Wayo, who watched in silence, smiling discreetly. Perhaps they were already used to the affection between the two and, therefore, did not make any comments.

"Since we are all gathered together, I will take this opportunity to update you on Mr. Thipakorn's case and on Wasu and Mr. Wasupon."

"P'Din, I have something important to talk to you about."

"What's up, N'Rose?"

In the past few days, P'Din had been busy going to the police station and the hospital every day, so she hadn't yet had a chance to discuss the doctor's recommendation about transferring her father to Bangkok for further treatment. At the very least, since they were a couple, she wanted to consult P'Din before making such an important decision.
However, they were both so busy that they barely had time for each other. Even so, she didn't want to seem spoiled or throw a tantrum, as she understood the situation well. So, she took advantage of this morning, three days after the bad events, to ask Din while they finally had the chance to have breakfast together. "It's about my father... P'Din, do you think it would be a good idea if I took him to..."

"P'Din! P'Din!"

"What's wrong, Uncle Kla? Why are you so agitated?"

Machine Translated by Google

"The hospital just called to say Kaew woke up!"

"Kaew!"

"N'Rose, we'll talk about this later, okay? I need to go to the hospital with Uncle Kla now."

Kasama explained to Tippapha, believing that she would understand the urgency of the situation. Once this was resolved, they could talk more calmly about the matter she wanted to discuss, as she did not want to give a hasty answer without thinking it through.

"Then I'll come along, P'Din! I want to visit Kaew too."

"P'Din and Uncle Kla, go visit first. I'll just go to the bathroom quickly and I'll meet you guys."

"Then go visit Kaew first, P'Din. The nurse said I need to sign some documents."

"N'Rose, meet me there, okay?"

"Yes, P'Din, I'll be right there."

In truth, saying that she needed to go to the bathroom was just an excuse from a coward like her. No matter how hard she tried, she could never completely rid herself of those little annoyances and the childish resentment she still carried. She wanted to be the girlfriend who would make P'Din proud of choosing her, instead of Kaew, who had always offered Din such intense and grandiose love. But these past few days, every time she had a moment alone, she would get stuck in these thoughts, silently reflecting.

Machine Translated by Google

about everything. He asked himself repeatedly where exactly his true place would be.

"Come on, Rose. If you keep looking like you're brooding over things, Kaew might not accept your apology."

She wanted to accept the relationship between P'Din and Kaew without feeling pain in her heart...

Why did it have to be so difficult?

"Kaew."

"Khun Din..."

"Don't try to get up, Kaew. The doctor hasn't allowed you to move yet."

Kasama gently touched her injured friend’s shoulder, a gentle gesture to prevent Kaew from disobeying the doctor’s orders. She was the first to visit her and was waiting for Uncle Kla and Tippapha to arrive to visit her as well. Although Kaew had regained consciousness, she had not yet been moved to a regular room. She needed to remain in the ICU until the attending physician authorized her to be moved. At the moment, visitors were limited to only fifteen minutes at a time.

"I'm glad you're safe, Kaew."

"I'm sorry..."

Machine Translated by Google

"You don't need to apologize anymore. I've already forgiven you for everything. In fact, I also want to apologize for putting you in danger because of me."

"It was my fault..."

"It wasn't anyone's fault. The real culprits have already gotten what they deserve. But if you still feel bad, then promise me that you'll recover quickly. Can you promise me that?"

"I..."

Kaew had never imagined that she would have a second chance at life. As she had always said, she was not afraid of death, even if it meant leaving this world. But in the end, she had been wrong, hadn't she? If she had left before her time, she would never have received forgiveness from the person she loved. And now, P'Din was holding her hand, giving her the strength to keep fighting until she was completely recovered.

"You understand, don't you? Your life is important to me. For me, Kaew is more than a friend."

"..."

"Because you're like part of my family."

"I have already made my decision, doctor, about my father's treatment."

"Okay. Does the family want him to continue treatment at this hospital or would they prefer to transfer him?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I will transfer my father to continue treatment in Bangkok."

"If that is your final decision, I will arrange the procedures

for the transfer." "Thank you very much."

Tippapha thanked the doctor in charge of the case, who was helping to organize everything. A few days earlier, he had given her this recommendation, but she asked for time to think about it, as it was an important decision.
Initially, he wanted to consult P'Din before making his decision, but after thinking it over, he decided that his father's well-being was the most important thing to prioritize. He didn't want to mix up personal issues and wanted to devote as much time as possible to taking care of him, as he had planned from the beginning, even before he left for Thailand.

"Rose, are you sure about this decision?"

"Yes, Dad. I've already decided. Let's go to Bangkok for a while, leave all this behind and start over."

Maybe then things will fall into place and follow the path they were meant to follow...

"Miss Rose, if P'Din finds out about this later, she will definitely be angry!"

"I intended to tell her, Moddaeng. But you saw for yourself that ever since everything happened, P'Din has been busy with so many things that she hasn't had time.
I actually wanted to tell her and let her take me to the airport, but today she already left early for the hospital."

Machine Translated by Google

"But if Miss Rose had warned us earlier, P'Din wouldn't have gone to the hospital!"

"She goes to the hospital every day. Some days she's there before I even go to visit my dad."

"Miss Rose decided to go to Bangkok because she's upset with P'Din, right? I know! It's because of Miss Kaew!"

"Between P'Din and me, we've already moved past that jealousy phase, Moddaeng. I'm not jealous, I'm not resentful. I just made a decision that's best for everyone, my father, P'Din, Kaew. Everyone has done so much for me. Now that I've received so much, I want to do something for others too."

Let me act like an adult, making decisions based on reason rather than emotion. Like this decision to move my father to Bangkok. Not only will it give him better treatment, but it will also give P'Din the opportunity to stay by Kaew's side until she fully recovers, as she wanted. Each of us has a role to play. And when this is all over, we can talk about the two of us.

About whether we want to stay together or end this relationship that started with a fake marriage.

"Oh! Miss Rose, Moddaeng, where are you going? Why do you have so much luggage?"

"I'm going to Bangkok. I'm glad I found you, Lom! Could you take me to the airport?"

"What is Miss Rose going to do there? How many days does she intend to stay?"

Machine Translated by Google

"I don't have a return date, Lom."

"What?! Have you told P'Din about this yet?"

"Not yet. I haven't had the opportunity. I decided to transfer my father to a hospital in Bangkok. The doctor recommended it because the rehabilitation technology and equipment there are more advanced than here."

"..."

Wayo was completely shocked, not knowing what to say. So she quickly picked up her cell phone to call her cousin. How could P'Din miss something so important and let her know first? But before she could send the urgent message, Tippapha stopped her, causing her to hesitate and not have the courage to call or send any notice.

"Don't tell P'Din anything, please. I'd rather you tell her later."

"N'Rose!"

"P'Din?"

"Sorry to interrupt, but I at least wanted my sister-in-law to talk to P'Din before heading to Bangkok."

Tippapha was completely surprised to see that P'Din managed to get to the airport on time, before her departure for Bangkok. She didn't even know when Wayo had broken the news, and the policewoman still rushed to take him

Machine Translated by Google

Moddaeng walked away, making way for her and P'Din to talk alone.

"Why didn't you tell me, N'Rose? About your father's transfer to Bangkok? This is something so important, and I only found out about it now from Lom!"

"I tried to tell you, P'Din, but you've been so busy lately... I actually wanted to talk to you before I decided, but then again, I'm already an adult enough to make that decision on my own."

"Then, I'll go to Bangkok as soon as I sort things out here."

"P'Din, you better stay and take care of everything here, the case, the Saenrak farm, and Kaew."

"N'Rose! But about Kaew, I can explain!"

"You've explained enough, P'Din. I understand everything. And I understand it in a way that I won't be childish or stubbornly selfish anymore."

Kasama heard the response from the woman he loved without being able to hide his surprise at the change.
Tippapha now spoke with maturity and rationality, like someone who had grown up. Her face and tone of voice no longer showed jealousy or anger, something that before made her give in and try to please her.

"Now, each of us has responsibilities to fulfill.
I want to focus on taking care of my father, as I always planned.
And you, P'Din, should stay here and

Machine Translated by Google

take care of Kaew until she fully recovers.
We are just separating temporarily, not forever."

"N'Rose, you're going back to Chiang Rai, aren't you?"

"Yes, I will go back. I don't know how long my father will need
for rehabilitation, but I will definitely go back to Chomchan Farm."

"I'll wait. I'll wait until you come back."

"While we're apart, I want you to reflect on everything that happened.
I'll use this time to reflect too. About everything between the two of us. P'Din,
try asking yourself..."

Reflect on whether what we call love is strong and solid enough to
be something unshakable. Or if what we feel for each other was just a
passing enchantment, created by proximity and circumstances that
forced us to depend on and protect each other.

Did our relationship arise from true and deep feelings? Or was it just an
illusion that enveloped us so much that we couldn't distinguish it from
reality?

"About that, I don't need time to think. I'm sure the person I love is you,
N'Rose."

"You don't need to answer now. Take some time for yourself, reflect deeply
and find out who is really in your heart."

"If, in the end, P'Din is still sure it's me..."

Kasama watched as Tippapha took the diamond ring off the ring
finger of her left hand and placed it on her hand, with a slight smile. It was
not a

Machine Translated by Google

a gesture of rupture or a definitive farewell, but rather a silent question, an invitation for time to bring a clearer and truer answer.

Clearer than any "I love you" they had ever exchanged...

Rose was returning the heart she had received from P'Din in a way that had never seemed completely fair.
As if she had achieved something unbalanced, for P'Din
had been forced to accept a forged marriage. Now, she wanted
Din to have the chance to choose for herself. And if in the end, Din's answer was no longer her, then she would accept it without any resistance and make way for the true owner of her heart.

"If, when we meet again, P'Din is still certain... then bring this ring back to me."

Machine Translated by Google

Chapter 19

The past or any other day, is still you.

“Thank you for everything, P'Din.”

“I hope you get lucky and can start your life over.”

“I apologize on Rose’s behalf as well. I’m so sorry for everything I’ve done and I’m ashamed, so much so that I don’t

Machine Translated by Google

I can handle it. And I really appreciate you and Rose not holding me responsible for everything."

"Live your life happily from now on. If you need anything or if there is any problem in Chiang Mai, you can let me know."

"Thank you very much, P'Din. The gratitude I have for you and my father will be something I will never forget."

Kasama bowed, not wanting an older person to do the same. She felt that what she had done to help was a great favor, one that was impossible to repay in full. She wanted to do her best to return all the help she had received from Kaew, who had saved her life and the life of the person she loved. That way, between the two of them, as old friends, there would be nothing pending between them.

It was like when she helped Kaew get transferred to another hospital in Chiang Mai, as per the father and daughter's wishes. Uncle Kla told her that, as he was getting older, he wanted to rest after working all his life. Kaew, when he recovered, would start a small business in Chiang Mai. Kasama agreed to this, thinking it was the best solution for everyone involved.

At least, the things that Kaew had done wrong, even though she had forgiven him, could not make Tippapha suffer emotionally by letting Kaew return to be her helper by her side. However, before she could resolve everything as per her wish to get closure quickly after the Mahattanakorn incident, she had not yet sent Kaew back to her hometown with Uncle Kla. The person she loved had decided to part ways and go far away from her life.

Machine Translated by Google

It had been exactly a week since her loved one had transferred Mr. Thipakorn to Bangkok for treatment. And the two of them had lost touch, as she did not dare to send messages or call to ask, as her wife had asked for some time to be apart and reflect on everything.

She had promised the person she loved that she would stop taking care of N'Rose as soon as Din asked her to do so, and that she would let her go if that was Din's wish.

Now, as much as she wanted to keep it...

She had to let her go, respecting her decision.

“Goodbye, Kaew.”

“Goodbye, P'Din.”

The friendship of almost fifteen years between us has come to an end. And now, we both go our separate ways.

Although parting doesn't mean we'll never meet again, if in the future we happen to meet again, Kasama hopes that she and her old friend can smile at each other with open hearts. And from then on, they each went their separate ways without ever crossing paths again.

"I really have no will to live, as P'Lom told me."

"Fire! How did you get here? You didn't tell me before."

Machine Translated by Google

"I wanted to see what the situation is like for those who were abandoned by their wives. I heard that Rose left P'Din."

"Say things that touch the heart. If you see someone down, it doesn't hurt to help."

"Hey, P'Nam! Fire has a motto that if they see someone down, they'll help them right away, why wait?"

But unfortunately, not even the confusion and excitement of the younger people who were on the farm with everyone gathered together now managed to divert Kasama's attention. It seems that the owner of the farm lost her spirit since the day she was left by her beloved.

Now, she managed to solve all the cases and close Kaew's situation, finishing everything in less than two weeks. But, after everything calmed down and the culprits were punished according to the law, the person she loved the most and was the most important in her life was no longer by her side...

"Sorry, Fire. You can curse me all you want, it's my fault with N'Rose. I admit my mistake with all my heart."

"..."

Atjima watched his older brother who didn't say anything, nor disagree, as he usually did. While Wayo seemed resigned to Kasama's situation. Apo just shook his head with regret at the situation and expressed his opinion, which everyone there probably shared.

"This is hard to deal with, P'Din."

Machine Translated by Google

"You must be missing P'Din a lot, huh, N'Rose? Ever since you went to Bangkok, Moddaeng hasn't seen you this excited or wanting to go out anywhere."

"Do you miss Din?"

"Yes, because N'Rose and P'Din love each other very much. When they have to be apart, of course they will miss her."

"Moddaeng, tell me, what happened between you two while I was unconscious?"

Mr. Thipakorn was attentive to the stories told by those close to Tippapha. Moddaeng, in his easygoing manner, told everything without hesitation. Although some parts were exaggerated, as a father, he could distinguish what was real and cared about his daughter's feelings.

"So, Dad, if you want to know more, you can ask Moddaeng."

"I've said more than I needed to, already."

"Ah, right, so about N'Rose and P'Din, whatever to tell, Moddaeng will give all the details."

"Enough, please help me take it to N'Rose."

The landlord gave an order and asked Moddaeng to stop talking, before driving into the garden in front of the house, which had a small flower bed. This house was the only one in the village that was not very large, and Tippapha said he had rented it for easy access to the hospital, which was very close by, with the intention of staying there until his father recovered.

Machine Translated by Google

"Daddy, what are you doing out here?"

"Staying indoors all the time makes me bored, I'm tired."

"But Dad isn't completely recovered yet, is he? Staying out in the sun and wind for too long can make you sick."

"I want to talk to Rose."

Tippapha exchanged glances with her father, who looked at her fondly, before Moddaeng made way for her to speak to her father in private, then left to do the housework. Tippapha then stopped being lost in her thoughts and sat down in the rocking chair next to her father's car.

"What does Daddy want to talk about?"

"About Din."

If it was about P'Din, she would rather not talk about it now, as she still felt confused and was not ready to discuss her. She did not want to talk about P'Din and feel even more distressed, especially while she could not deal with her own feelings.

She thought that distance was the best solution for both of them at this moment, but this past week, although it was a short time compared to the two or three months they had lived together, just seven days without P'Din by her side was too painful and lonely. She still felt anxious, wondering if P'Din was okay, how she was living without her, if she was eating properly, getting enough rest, or if she was happy.

Machine Translated by Google

She wanted to know many things, many questions, but perhaps she didn’t have the courage to take the initiative to contact him, even though she was the one who decided to distance herself. However, if she were honest with herself, she secretly hoped that even though they were physically far apart, their hearts didn’t have to be far apart either. So, she waited every day for P’Din to reach out to her, asking how she was doing or updating her on his daily routine. Even though her phone had been silent and had no notifications for the entire past week, she still harbored this hope.

"Does Rose have any problems with Din? Was there a fight or something that affected the two of you?"

"No, Dad. Rose and P'Din didn't fight."

"Is Rose lying to her father or lying to herself?"

"No, Dad. I'm not lying. Rose and P'Din didn't fight."

Because if they had fought, their relationship would have broken down, and they would have separated with resentment, like couples who have serious problems and can no longer meet.

But in her and P'Din's case, it wasn't like that. They didn't fight, they just needed some time to step back and reflect on everything that had happened. Whether it was the fake marriage, the hardship she had faced and needed to be protected by someone like P'Din, or the abuse and persecution of the Mahattanakorn, the situation of being pressured all the time caused feelings between them to arise intensely and quickly.

Machine Translated by Google

It was like comparing love to a battle on the battlefield. When everything calms down and the war ends, that's when we need to stop and reflect clearly on our feelings, asking ourselves if everything that happened can really be called love.

"So why did you move to Bangkok? Being so far away will make you more tired."

"I'm an adult now, Dad. I want to prove to you and P'Din that I'm capable of taking care of myself and taking care of you too."

"I know that you are already an adult, Rose, from the many things you had to face while I was unable to know and protect you. And I believe that P'Din also knows that my daughter has grown up and become a grown woman."

"Because everything ended well, Father. The contract that P'Din made with you has also been fulfilled. In the past, I caused P'Din a lot of trouble and hindered him in many ways. P'Din had to go through hardships, suffer, make enemies, and be threatened because of me. Now, I want to step aside and not be a problem for him anymore."

"Do you love P'Din?"

The owner of the beautiful face nodded in response to her father, not hesitating to share her feelings, because deep down, her heart was clear: it was always P'Din and it will always be only her.

Even though she wasn't sure if P'Din's heart was still firmly with her, perhaps due to the stronger bond with Madam Kaew, someone who had been by her side for longer, she would accept the truth and defeat if her answer changed.

Machine Translated by Google

"I love P'Din."

“P'Din! How did you get here?”

“Open the door for me, Moddaeng. I came to see Mr. Thipakorn.”

If she came to see Mr. Thipakorn like she said, why did P'Din bring a rose? Even though P'Din gave a roundabout answer, Moddaeng, as a number one fan, was already excited, because she was sure that she would come to settle things and reconcile with Rose.

Moddaeng was betting on it!

“This way, please, P'Din. Mr. Thipakorn is watching TV in the living room.”

“What about Rose?”

“Rose went out to buy something at the supermarket. She should be back soon, because it’s been a while. Are you going to wait to see Rose too?”

“Of course, I traveled from Chiang Rai to see Rose.”

In fact, Mr. Thipakorn had contacted her directly yesterday and said that he had something urgent to discuss. She was very happy to see that Mr. Thipakorn was available to discuss this with her.
Thipakorn was recovering so quickly and could now speak clearly, although he still had difficulty walking and maintaining balance after the brain surgery.
But the doctors said the treatment was going well, and soon he would recover and be able to return to Chomchan Farm.

Machine Translated by Google

“Sir, P'Din is here to see you.”

“Are you here yet, P'Din? You arrived faster than I expected.”

“Hello, Mr. Thipakorn.”

“Wait a minute, ma’am. I have something important to talk to you about.”

“What is the urgent matter Mr. Thipakorn wants to discuss with P’Din? Does it have to do with Rose? P’Din is worried, so she drove all the way from Chiang Rai since last night.”

The old man looked at Kasama with an expression that showed he understood her anxiety and concern for her daughter. But he also had no idea that, after a few hours of separation, someone so far away would be willing to drive all the way to Bangkok to meet him the next day.

“I have a question for P'Din about Rose. Just one question.”

“You may ask, sir.”

“P'Din, do you love Rose?”

“Yes, I love Rose very much.”

It seems like their answers weren't that different, right?

Machine Translated by Google

The yellow Jeep with the Chiang Rai registration plate...

Tippapha looked at the familiar-looking car parked in front of her house in the village. She was certain when she recognized the registration plate and saw the province clearly marked on the sign. However, since she was already passing the house, she was unable to turn around and park somewhere else in time. She had to reverse and park inside the house. Moddaeng then ran over to open the door for her.

"You took a long time to come back today, Rose. P'Din has been waiting for a while now."

To be honest, if she had known that P'Din was going to visit her father, she would have delayed returning home even longer, or she would have waited until P'Din got tired of waiting and returned to the countryside in Chiang Rai. That way, she wouldn't have to meet Din while she wasn't ready yet.

Finding each other wasn't the problem...

But his heart was not ready!

"Rose."

"P'Din."

"P'Din brought these thornless roses from the garden next to the house."

Kasama held out the thornless roses to Rose's pretty face, who seemed hesitant and still didn't want to take the flowers she had brought from Chiang Rai to Bangkok, a journey of more than ten hours. But finally, the person she loved accepted the gift, even without

Machine Translated by Google

saying nothing more, as was his custom, just whispering a thank you. This made her heart warm and she gained a little courage.

"Thanks."

"While Rose was gone, I spent every day tending the rose garden. Every flower is blooming, not one of them has wilted."

"Does P'Din have that much free time?"

"Yes, now I have plenty of time. After solving the case, I organized the pending work, so now I have much more free time."

"Having free time is good, so P'Din can rest."

Although she tried to speak simply so as not to sound over the top, she didn't want Din to think she was expressing herself too much since their status was still up in the air. As she had said before, she didn't want to come across as possessive or give the impression that she was putting herself in the role of owner, because if in the end she wasn't the only one, the one who would get hurt the most would be herself.

"P'Din sorted everything out with Kaew."

"And why are you telling me this, P'Din? What happened between you and Kaew is not something I need to know, there is no need to tell me this."

"I just wanted to let you know, Rose, that Kaew and Uncle Kla are no longer at Saenrak Farm. They have left and moved back to Chiang Mai to live there permanently."

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha was silent, trying to think of what she should say to what she had just heard. But in the end, she chose to remain silent as she could not find the right words. Her eyes then fixed on the wedding ring that was still on Kasama's finger, unlike her, who had given it back to Din before coming to Bangkok.

Why does P'Din still wear the wedding ring, even though the fake wedding plan is already over?

"From now on, every Friday I will drive from Chiang Rai to Bangkok. I will arrive at Rose's house on Saturday morning, ask to stay for a night, and on Sunday afternoon I will return to Chiang Rai. This will continue until Rose and Mr. Thip return to the farm."

"Why would P'Din do this? Driving that far can't be fun."

"I don't think it's fun either, but I want you to see how dedicated I am and how hard I'm trying. I want you to see that I'm serious about our relationship. If you don't believe me, then you can see by my consistency from now on."

"..."

"From now on, I'll tell you I miss you every Friday."

"This weekend, Friday, is living up to its name, isn't it?"

"What, Moddaeng?"

Machine Translated by Google

"It's just that tomorrow is Saturday, which means that Lady Rose won't be alone because P'Din will come to visit her."

"That's nonsense!"

Tippapha replied, cutting off the conversation and deliberately dodging Moddaeng's teasing comment, who had a gift for playfulness, as if she was hired by P'Din to tease and mess with her whenever she got the chance. Even though they were so far apart, it seemed like she could still muster the strength to mess with her feelings.

It had been more than a month since she decided to bring her father for treatment at the hospital in Bangkok.
After the first week, in which P'Din made a visit to meet in person instead of phone conversations or messages, for the next five weeks, she kept her word and continued to visit them without fail.

once.

And she would still bring roses from her orchard, until, on the last time, she ended up complaining to P'Din by accident, fearing that, when she returned to the farm, all her beautiful roses would be cut by her, as P'Din was so dedicated to taking them as gifts.

"Tomorrow, where are we going for our date? Have you chosen yet, Rose?"

"It's not a date, we're just going to have dinner, watch a movie, pray or do some shopping."

"Well, everything you said, Rose, is exactly what a date means."

Going out on a date is something for couples who are just getting to know each other, but for her and P'Din, who were still in the

Machine Translated by Google

In the process of reviewing her feelings, it was nothing more than a simple outing, not a date like Moddaeng was trying to make it out to be. But regardless of the reasons, she felt good about spending time with Din, something she had never done before.

It seemed like the two of them had been forced to pretend to deceive influential people through a fake marriage, without being able to build a relationship from the little things. Because at the time, nothing was going their way, and the circumstances around them were not safe. But after everything ended well, this time for reflection and not having to rush the words “I love you” allowed them to have the chance to learn and experience aspects of each other that they had never seen before.

Start from scratch...

Now, starting from one, together they reach
hundred.

"P'Din."

"What it was?"

"Next Friday, you don't need to come to Bangkok, okay?"

"Why not?"

"There's no reason, no. Rose said not to come, so you don't have to come. That's all." Kasama looked at her loved one with a dejected expression, as if she was very disappointed. After being prevented from coming to Bangkok next week, she thought about how, all the time,

Machine Translated by Google

Over time, she had shown herself to be constant, proving her love for Rose uninterruptedly, without ever failing.

She knew she had made a lot of mistakes. After reflecting on this during the first week she was separated from Tippapha, she realized that she had prioritized things poorly and had made the person she loved most feel neglected and uncared for.

At that moment, she was more concerned about Kaew’s life than anything else, because she believed that Kaew had sacrificed himself to protect her and the person she loved. So she prayed for Kaew’s safety and wanted to repay him for his sacrifice. So she went to the hospital every day and arranged for Kaew to be transferred to Chiang Mai for treatment, as well as quickly resolved the legal and work issues that arose after she lost a talented assistant.

She thought Tippapha would understand and wait for her. But as she reflected on her own perspective and listened to the advice of Apo, Wayo, and Atjima, she realized that if she were the one feeling neglected, no matter the good reasons behind it, the feelings she had lost would be hard to recover. When she looked at things from Tippapha’s point of view, she began to understand her feelings better and wanted to make things right to make sure she knew that her heart had never changed.

"I'm very sorry."

"Why is P'Din apologizing?"

"P'Din did something wrong, he must have made a mistake again, that's why Rose doesn't want P'Din to come."

"P'Din, listen to Rose first..."

Machine Translated by Google

"I can't live in Chiang Rai without Rose."

In the end, no matter how hard she tried to maintain a firm and serious posture, P'Din's cuteness and cute manner at this moment, as if he was acting childishly, robbed even her of the right to behave like an adult. This made Tippapha unable to hold back her laughter and looked lovingly at the person she loved and would always love, with a loving gaze.

"The reason I won't let you come is because I'm afraid you'll come and end up getting hurt."

"Like this?!"

"The doctor allowed my father to return to Chiang Rai.

In three days, I'm taking my father back to

farm. If P'Din comes next week, there may be

sure you won't find anyone, except an empty house." "Are you saying

you're really going back to Chiang Rai?"

"Yes, because my home is in Chiang Rai. If I don't go back, where else would I go?"

"So you'll go back to Saenrak Farm with me, right?"

Kasama asked with renewed hope, like someone who had found a new reason to feel hopeful. He then, without asking permission, reached out and held Tippapha's soft hand, showing his happiness in an unrestrained way, while Tippapha just smiled back and slowly withdrew his hand with a small gesture of resistance, as if he were

Machine Translated by Google

guarding, realizing that his wife was now not as easy to please and accomodate as before.

"Rose will go back to Chomchan Farm, of course, my home is there."

"Returning to Chiang Rai this time, that means Rose agrees to go back to being the same as before with P'Din, right?"

"Whose side are you on? I'm not sure anymore."

Tippapha pretended to be serious, crossing her arms and staring at Moddaeng, as if she wanted her to understand the seriousness of the moment.
During the entire time she was away from P'Din, not only her father, but Moddaeng was also the main person responsible for insisting that she reconcile with Din, always suggesting that she get closer to P'Din, something that Tippapha still did not fully understand.

"When people love each other, why waste time with long fights? That only takes away the sweetness of the relationship."

"But P'Din still hasn't told me he loves me."

"What did you say, Rose?"

"Nothing, it's nothing. I'll take a look at the flower garden. I don't know how it is now."

The owner of the pretty face abruptly cut off the conversation, after writing down her own feelings and sharing them alone, without giving Moddaeng a chance to know what she really thought. For more than a month, P'Din was

Machine Translated by Google

clear and made her feel like she was first in his life, but Din still didn't give her the answer she was looking for before deciding to take a break from the relationship. Although their time apart wasn't as serious as she initially wanted, P'Din still made a point of traveling to see her every week, just to tell her he missed her.

But other than the words "I miss you", P'Din did not answer the question she still had pending.

Is Din sure deep down that the answer is that she hasn't changed...

"Miss Rose, something's happened."

"Mr. Yos, what happened?"

"Someone has trespassed on our land, the Chomchan farm. I came here to warn you first, and then I will tell your father."

"You don't have to tell my father. I'll sort it out myself. Mr. Yos, go quickly."

The farm owner’s daughter, who was admiring the rose garden she finally had time to look at, was interrupted in her appreciation when the head worker, Mr. Yos, rushed in with some important news. Tippapha decided that she would not tell her father about it and would try to solve it herself. As she said, she wanted to grow up, not depend on anyone and solve problems herself.

"The person who broke into the property is heading that way, Miss Rose."

Machine Translated by Google

"..."

If Chomchan Farm had been raided by the tycoons before, now the flower farm was probably being attacked by someone connected to Watinwanich, changing something. Even without needing to be told, she knew who it was. It made her stop, lost in thought, as if she had been transported back in time.

There were colorful petals scattered across the ground, creating a trail for her to follow, like a symbol to guide her, something that reminded her of how she used to play with P'Din when they were children. Back then, they would play treasure hunt. P'Din would hide his favorite teddy bear and she had to find it. When she was little, she was a little shy and didn't like playing hide and seek, so the teddy bear was the only one she hid.

But the owner of the farm, no matter if it was when she was still a child or now as an adult, P'Din was always the person who took care of her and cared about her. Like how she would often help her find important things by creating arrows from flower petals or leaves and twigs that she found all over the field.

Din guided her to find her favorite teddy bear...

And then, he guided Rose to the hidden gifts...

"P'Din, where are you?"

Tippapha called out to her, knowing that she was probably hiding somewhere nearby. As she continued to follow the trail of petals, she thought that the path seemed more complicated and distant than it had in her childhood.

Machine Translated by Google

Or maybe P'Din was just having fun getting back at her for being so hard to reach, like Moddaeng said.

"There's no point in hiding, Rose knows this is all P'Din's doing."

She looked around, having reached the end of the trail of petals, but still without finding the person she was looking for, nor the hidden gift. At the end of the path, there were only rose petals arranged in the shape of a heart, leaving that place empty. It was as if only she was there, waiting for the surprise that the master of the plan had not yet revealed.

"Or do you want me to cry first so you can show up, P'Din, like when I was a kid, when you were always the first one to come and comfort me when I was sulking?"

"No need to cry, because from now on I won't make you shed any more tears."

Finally, Kasama appeared, after hearing the words that connected with our relationship in the past, while there was still a surprise that had not been revealed, something that the head of the Saenrak farm had hidden behind her.

"What are you doing, P'Din? Are you messing with Rose? We're grown up, you know."

"I just wanted to reminisce. Do you remember how important this place is to us?"

"It's the place where we took our pre-wedding photos, isn't it?"

"Yes, but try going back in time a little further."

Machine Translated by Google

"If it's further back in time... this is where Rose and P'Din first met."

"Yes, this is where we first met. I came to the farm with your father and found a little girl sitting in the gazebo crying because she had soiled her pretty dress. You remember that, don't you?"

"To tell the truth, I've already forgotten a bit, I was so young back then. But, if P'Din says I was crying, then yes, that's me." **"So our feelings aren't just from two months, but from twenty years."**

The owner of the beautiful face raised an eyebrow, curious, and looked into her wife's eyes, who made her feel something she didn't expect with her words. Then, P'Din explained more, with a soft voice and the warmest smile in the world.

"Our twenty-year bond, compared to the love of just a few months, may be inferior. But let me prove to you, N'Rose, that even twenty years from now, or more, the only answer in my heart will always be you, and that will never change."

Tippapha stared at the latest surprise P'Din had pulled out from the hidden place behind her: a teddy bear, her most cherished treasure from the past, now restored, with neatly stitched scars, and still wearing a wedding dress that P'Din had secretly sewn for her, no one knew when.

The old teddy bear had transformed into the elegant teddy bear, with a large diamond ring placed like a necklace.

Machine Translated by Google

"N'Rose, shall we get married?"

"..."

"Let us love each other with understanding, love her in the best way possible, more than before, and live together for many, many years."

If Kasama was really proposing, it would be the most romantic and clear way in the world.

No woman in the world would want to refuse this request.

Chapter 20

The rose that is by Kasama's side, eternally.

"Daddy said that when you grow up, N'Rose, you will be P'Din's bride."

Machine Translated by Google

"What is a bride, P'Wasu?"

"N'Rose is the person who has to marry me. I'm the groom."

"P'Wasu is the groom, N'Rose is the bride, and P'Din, what is she?"

Tippapha asked her friend with the innocence of a child, because if when she grew up she was to be the bride and marry P'Wasu, the groom, then what would P'Din be when she became an adult?

"Let P'Din be a dog. A silly dog."

"No, P'Din is not a dog."

P'Wasu would always make fun of P'Din. He liked to tease her, but P'Din would always stay quiet, never arguing or defending herself when she was provoked. Like that time, when P'Wasu brought her friends, the children of the farm workers, and they all laughed at P'Din.

"N'Rose, don't mess with P'Din. Come play bride and groom with me."

"Uhh, N'Rose is in pain, I'm going to tell daddy!"

Because of the force with which P'Wasu pulled her, N'Rose didn't want to play bride, but she was forced to. Furthermore, she was pulled in a way that caused her to stumble and fall. The scream of pain echoed throughout the Chomchan farm, and her parents would probably come soon to help her scold P'Wasu.

"P'Wasu, don't force N'Rose, she's hurt!"

"Look, what do you have to do with this, you sick dog. Hahaha, P'Din is a dog, how disgusting."

Machine Translated by Google

With a light push, P'Wasu made P'Din fall to the ground next to N'Rose. P'Din seemed weaker than Rose's "fiancé", but Tippapha remembered that whenever she needed help, P'Din would help her in her own way. There was never a time when she abandoned her or ran for her life, even though she knew she would be the target of P'Wasu's taunts.

When the sound of the adults on the farm began to approach, P'Wasu ran away from the farm with his friends.

"N'Rose, what happened?"

"P'Din is bleeding."

"Don't worry, it's just a little bruise. Let's go home, I'll take you."

"N'Rose can't get up."

"Hold my hand."

Holding P'Din's little hand...

Although she seemed insecure and unstable, N'Rose felt an inexplicable sense of warmth and security whenever she held P'Din's hand.

And Kasama's hand, which she loves with all her heart, today...

The same hand she is holding, joining hands and walking together, in our second marriage, which was

Machine Translated by Google

organized in a simple and intimate way at the Chomchan farm, only with the closest families, without great ostentation, unlike the fake wedding we had held before, which was part of the plan to deceive the rich, as suggested by Wayo, the mastermind behind the plan.

But today's wedding was planned with complete sincerity and love between her and P'Din, and she wanted to repeat it so that her father could be a part of this important moment in his beloved daughter's life. She wanted her father to know that he had not made a mistake in choosing the best for her, as he always did.

Just as her father did not follow through on his promise to her grandfather that she should marry a rich man, because he knew deep down how dubious the family's history was. But her father allowed her to marry Watinwanich because that was what she truly wanted.

Kasama Watinwanich...

A person who may seem difficult to approach, reserved, with a very personal world of her own, loving solitude or appearing ordinary to others, but to her, P'Din is the most special and perfect person. She is warm, kind, delicate, caring. P'Din has never changed her care, since the times we grew up together. She is a firm, strong, gentle, but not weak Kasama. She wanted to entrust her life to her, so that they could take care of each other.

As P'Din's bride, N'Rose...

"What are you thinking?"

"N'Rose was thinking about when we were kids."

"Can you tell me too?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Of course. Between N'Rose and P'Din, there are no secrets."

Tippapha smiled broadly at her beloved, who was looking at her with a look of love. Even without having to say the words “I love you”, as happened in the last two months, when we chose to stay apart and learn about each other from different perspectives. Starting from scratch again, little by little, it made our love become stronger than before, making us realize how much we love and need each other.

Now, she had no more doubts about the love P'Din gave her, and

I believed that she also thought the same way about the love she gave him.

"N'Rose is remembering the day she was forced by Wasu to be the bride.

At that time, Wasu mistreated P'Din because he wanted to be the groom."

"P'Din remembers, yes. That day, N'Rose cried a lot."

"When she was a child, N'Rose used to throw tantrums all the time, crying in every situation."

"Yes, I remember. At that time, I asked Auntie Chan a lot how to make N'Rose stop crying."

"Now it makes sense, P'Din tried everything, right? N'Rose remembers that P'Din would always comfort her, give her candy or make funny faces to make N'Rose stop crying. P'Din has always been devoted to N'Rose, both when we were kids, and now. Did you know?"

Machine Translated by Google

"The dedication I have for N'Rose will never change, forever. I promise."

Kasama made this promise firmly, as if it were an oath of love to the person she was sure she would love until her last breath.

To get to today's wedding, we both went through a lot together. We overcame many tests and, in the end, we didn't choose to separate, but rather to hold on tighter and move forward together, facing obstacles and tests that may arise from now on.

But she believed that love would help us overcome all difficulties together.

"I'm touched, because it was thanks to the wind that P'Din had this day."

"Hurry up and take credit yourself, Lom."

"Or are you going to argue? If I hadn't come up with the fake marriage plan, P'Din and you, N'Rose, wouldn't have had the chance to fall in love and get married for real this round."

Wayo wasn't saying this to brag, he was just being honest. The outcome was clear to everyone, and there was no way he was going to let Apo or Atjima take the credit. Lieutenant Wayo had not only solved the criminals' cases, he had also helped arrange the romance. Having done so many good deeds, he deserved something in return. May the world bring him a premium-quality partner as a reward!

Machine Translated by Google

"How lazy to discuss! So, next time will be Lom's wedding?

When you go, let me know."

"Impossible. In this life, I have yet to find the right person."

"Oh, and who are all these right people you've already met?"

"I just thought they were, but they weren't, so we had to go our own ways."

Atjima shook his head in disapproval at Lieutenant Wayo's typical response, before looking back at Apo, who was quiet, not showing any opinion or wanting to join the conversation with the others.

"Then next time should be with Apo."

"That has nothing to do with me, Fai. It's not going to happen."

"It's not always like that, is it? Even P'Din got married first, which no one expected. I thought it would be Lom, because you always seem so obsessed with love."

"Fai! That's a compliment, right..., But Lom will pass the time to you. When it comes to love, Lom is in no rush until he finds the right person. Age matters, and you, Apo, are almost thirty. How about thinking a little about love and not just at work?"

"Well, I'm interested in love too."

"Seriously, Apo? What do you mean? Update me, quick!"

"Well, Valentine's Day is coming up, so I'm thinking of a promotion to attract customers to the

Machine Translated by Google

resort and the hotel, and I am also looking at expansion options for the resort into a new branch..."

About love, Apo's thought was...

"Ah, okay, Apo. Come on, Fai, let Apo marry work, okay!"

"From now on, Dad asks that you leave N'Rose in your care, P'Din. I trust you, as I have shown on previous occasions. And N'Rose needs to take care of you too. May you love each other with understanding. If there are problems, talk about them. Also, my daughter is no longer a child, so please do not throw tantrums and do not give P'Din a headache. And P'Din, do not give in to everything she wants. If N'Rose does something you do not like, please teach her. N'Rose, if something bothers you, talk to him directly. Understanding will make your love last."

"Thank you, Dad."

Kasama and Tippapha bowed to greet N'Rose's father, Thipakorn, who was in charge
of both sides during the royal wedding. After asking Thipakorn's permission and receiving his approval, Kasama dedicated herself to proving her love so that her wife would believe it. Until the day Tippapha finally decided to marry her in a royal ceremony.

"N'Rose, can I put the ring on you?"

Machine Translated by Google

Tippapha held out his hand for P'Din to place the diamond ring on his left ring finger, as if it had happened before.

But this time, she felt more emotional than the first time, perhaps because it was a real ceremony, done with sincere feelings. Her heart was overflowing with happiness and she felt touched by every moment.

"P'Din, extend your hand to N'Rose as well."

P'Din held out his hand affectionately, as always. Although Thipakorn had warned her not to spoil N'Rose too much, Kasama knew that this was a difficult task, because pleasing Tippapha had become a joy in her life. She had spoiled her since childhood, and she would continue to do so, now and in the future.

"N'Rose, throw the bouquet, please. Moddaeng is ready in front."

The beautiful bride, dressed in a pure white dress that perfectly matched the women’s suit P’Din had chosen, looked at the small stage, where Moddaeng was standing tall. She ran to the front, spread her arms, and prepared to catch the bouquet of roses. She winked and made a gesture, as if she was using her connection with her to make N’Rose achieve her own dream of marrying P’Din. “Is Moddaeng going to be the next one to get married?”

"Yes, N'Rose, Moddaeng and P'Tae are getting to know each other."

"Tae? Uncle Tam's son?"

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes, P'Din, it was P'Tae who approached Moddaeng first."

Kasama laughed with his beautiful wife after Moddaeng pulled off an amazing surprise at our wedding by revealing that she was dating Tae, the son of the new team leader, Uncle Tam, who replaced the resigning Uncle Kla. Neither N'Rose nor I knew they were dating, or when or how they started getting involved. Maybe they took advantage of the chaos to plant their little seed of love.

"She's quite the mischievous one, that Moddaeng."

Tippapha commented playfully before turning away to ensure the bouquet ceremony was fair.
In addition to Moddaeng, Wayo had also brought Atjima to wait and join in the anticipation. Either way, one of the three would be lucky enough to catch the bouquet and perhaps find love or become the next bride.

"I'm going to play now! One, two, three!"

"Ah! P'Din, why did you move your hand away? Moddaeng was almost catching it!"

The bouquet of roses, which Moddaeng was about to catch, was deflected by P'Din's hand and ended up falling into Apo's lap, who was sitting in a work conversation, not paying attention to what was happening.

"Where did this flower come from?"

"Uncle, I congratulate you in advance."

Kasama quickly joked, while Apo still had a confused expression, not quite understanding what was happening. She then turned to look with

Machine Translated by Google

affectionately looked his wife, Tippapha, in the eyes, with a look full of meaning, as they had come to the end of their royal marriage.

"P'Din, did you forget something?"

"What did I forget?"

"Humf, it always has to be N'Rose who opens everything first."

The beautiful bride made a cute little “tantrum” face that was clearly just a joke, looking more adorable than actually angry. Kasama was still trying to be a little shy and not tease her too much, but it was impossible not to smile when her impatient wife came over and kissed her softly on the lips, as if she had become braver, going from a peck on the cheek to a full-on kiss.

"I just wanted N'Rose to open first. Then I'll close it for you."

Kasama's sweet kiss seemed to no longer care about the looks or the giggles of others. It was as if the entire world didn't exist, only the two of them existed, completely immersed in the moment. Kasama didn't want to stop and, if N'Rose hadn't pushed her away with a light blow to the shoulder, she would have continued, shamelessly with her blushing face.

"P'Din! You're overdoing it!"

"It was just a joke, the real thing is what comes after that."

Machine Translated by Google

"..."

Why do P'Din's mischievous words make me so nervous now?

Is she talking about what is yet to come?

Is she referring to what she promised last night?

Screaming! I don't know what to think anymore!

As soon as the door to the bridal chamber was closed, signaling that the ceremony was successful, the newlywed couple threw themselves into each other's arms, not wanting to leave any space or distance between them. It seemed that they were ready to continue the unfinished story, with all the reasons and circumstances that had kept them apart until then.

But now, all we did was express our love through our actions...

The same way we always said "I love you" with words!

Our lips met, exchanging words of love and affection, although we wanted to express that love for much longer. But it was necessary to pause so that both of us could catch our breath before looking into each other's eyes, with a look full of love and desire to possess the other in a passionate moment.

"P'Din."

Machine Translated by Google

"Yes?"

"Why such a hurry?"

"I have been patient for a long time."

"So this is what P'Din really is like?"

"Because of you, N'Rose, I can be even more."

The response was not only verbal, but also an action.
P'Din didn't know how much this could melt the heart of the person receiving this answer. Now, she was being touched by her wife, who was using her nose and lips to explore her neck and shoulders, while her back was pressed against the bedroom wall.

They were so excited that they couldn't even get to bed. She, with a pounding heart and controlling her excitement, pulled P'Din's jacket and threw it aside.

"You are incredible."

"P'Din, you don't have to play with N'Rose like that."

"And the rest? Aren't you going to take the rest for me?"

If P'Din was trying to challenge N'Rose, she had chosen the wrong person. There was nothing she wouldn't do boldly. Even when Moddaeng provoked her, she always gave the best answer possible.
If P'Din were to challenge her, she would do even more. So, she, nervous but determined, unbuttoned Din's shirts one by one, without giving up.

"What's this? You want to strip me naked and then take everything for yourself?"

"You're cheeky!"

Machine Translated by Google

"Now it's your turn, my love."

Tippapha closed her eyes quickly, unable to look at the perfection of P'Din, which she had carefully unwrapped with her own hands.

After unbuttoning the last button, she quickly glanced at Din and then looked away, closing her eyes and trembling slightly, being teased back by P'Din.

Kasama used both hands to unbutton the back of her wedding dress, which was tight and full of details that required time and patience to undo. But on the other side, the other seemed impatient and worried about the time, so she used her lips to pull the strap of the dress and easily undid it.

The next moment happened without her realizing it, when her back gently rested on the soft bed, contrasting with the rush of both of them. Her body and mind gave in to the reverie of love, guided by the person she loved. She was in P'Din's arms, feeling as if she was his entire world.

The flower that had blossomed so beautifully had begun from fertile soil. Now, it was blossoming into its youthful perfection, a sweet and gentle enchantment, whose fragrance and taste of love enveloped it, making it unique and eternal.

If the petals of a rose were removed to answer whether love existed or not, the rose called Tippapha would be different from all the others.

Because she would only have one answer...

Love.

Love with all of Kasama's life and heart.

Machine Translated by Google

“What are you thinking?”

“Rose, can I respond with something other than missing P'Din?”

“No, you have to answer that you miss P'Din first, then you can say anything else.”

“What a passionate person.”

Tippapha raised her hand and gently pinched P’Din’s nose with a mischievous smile after she hugged her from behind and popped the question. She smiled at Din as she glanced over after our wedding ceremony that had taken place about a week ago. Everything we had planned before the wedding was proceeding as expected, smoothly and in an orderly manner.

"P'Din is a very loving wife."

"P'Din, now you can say the word 'wife' with complete certainty, right?"

“I'm telling the truth, you see.”

"Yes, Rose won't argue."

Kasama placed her lips gently on the head of her beloved wife, who was no longer just a title, and all the care and affection she had for Tippapha was still as strong as when we were just children, and she did her utmost to protect her wife.

“I am happy that now Saenrak Farm and Chomchan Farm have become one.”

Machine Translated by Google

“I’m happy too. In the past, we could only meet in the flower garden, but now we can visit each other freely.”

“So, should we think about changing the name of the farm?”

“Does P'Din have any ideas?”

“Chomchan Farm and Saenrak Farm, if we put the names together, it would be
Chomrak Farm.”

“That sounds good. But why did you leave Rose’s farm name in front?”

“Because I love Rose more than anything, and I'll do anything for her.”

“No need to keep saying sweet words, Rose already loves you too much.”

She loved him so much that Rose wanted to reward her beloved, P'Din, with a soft kiss on her cheek, the place she loved to touch the most. Soon after, Kasama, who had become the master at pampering, quickly turned the other side of her face so that Rose could also kiss it in the same way.

“I never imagined we would reach this day.”

“I also never imagined that I would be lucky enough to love and marry you, Rose.”

“In all this time, P'Din never liked anyone? Never dated anyone? How is that possible?”

“Yes, I’ve never liked anyone before, but you, Rose, also told me that you’ve never dated anyone, didn’t you?”

Machine Translated by Google

“Well, I’ve talked to a few people, but I’ve never dated. I’ve never fallen in love with anyone, and I’ve never had a boyfriend.”

Tippapha pulled away from her wife’s arms, wanting to see her expression more clearly. When she joked that she had been in a relationship with someone, P’Din was visibly disappointed. However, when she heard the truth that she had never dated anyone, Din’s face quickly brightened again, which made her smile a little at her reaction.

“Are you jealous, P'Din?”

“No, I’m not one to feel jealous like that.”

“I was jealous in the past, but not anymore.
Because I trust in the love you have for me, P'Din.”

“I also trust in the love you have for me, Rose.”

“Thank you for the love you have for me, P'Din. It means a lot to me.”

“And I thank you for being the happiness in my life, which was previously aimless.”

“Will we thank each other all day, P'Din?”

“We better be thankful every day for the rest of our lives.”

The owner of the beautiful face nodded her head in agreement with her wife's idea, before the two of us leaned over each other, hand in hand and side by side, to watch the progress of the "Saenrak" farm and the "Chomchan" farm now united as one. As we had planned, we would work together to manage them and make them grow, just like our love.

Machine Translated by Google

“Let’s go home, it’s almost lunch time.”

“The issue of food is really important to P'Din.”

“Food is an important issue for my wife.”

“You take such good care of me. I really didn’t make a mistake when I loved you. Oh, but actually, you already took care of me before you loved me, right?”

“Who said I didn’t love you?”

Kasama revealed her secret in a soft voice, as if to divert her wife's attention to something else, something more interesting than the lunch Aunty Chan was preparing for them, a lunch they were going to share with Mr. Thipakorn.

“Does that mean P'Din already loved me even before our fake marriage?”

“It wouldn't be quite 'love', I think the right term would be 'like'.”

“Ah, so P’Din confessed that he liked me before. I thought I was the one who fell in love first!”

“And you, when did you start to like me, Rose?”

“Well, when we started living together. After the fake marriage, I started to like it more and more.”

“So, I already liked you before. When we met after sixteen years, I was already madly in love.”

“Really? But you seemed so calm back then. You didn’t show anything.”

Machine Translated by Google

“I’m not usually good at showing my feelings. And even more so with you, Rose. When I started to like you, it became even harder to hide.”

In fact, Kasama had always been someone who preferred to show her affection with actions, not words. Although she was more expressive now and had someone who loved her deeply, if she remembered what had happened months ago, neither Tippapha nor anyone else would probably realize that her heart had already been shaken since they had met again.

“Or maybe, in fact, I’ve liked you since I was a child. Maybe that’s why I’ve never looked at anyone else.”

“P’Din, you always have something surprising to tell me. Look, your ears turned red. But in truth, I was probably already impressed by you since I was a child, without realizing it. That’s why I never fell in love with anyone until I met you again. When you came back into my life, I simply fell in love.”

“Speaking like that, you leave me speechless.”

“Thank you for being the solid ground that helped me

to grow.” This rose promises...

To stay by Kasama's side for all eternity, until the end of time.